



# 原始戰記 I

Yuan Shi zhan ji

陳國權

# Chapter 101 - The Shaman's Requirement

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

If the Shaman asked this question to another person in the tribe, that person would've been thrilled. However, it was Shao Xuan who was sitting in front of the Shaman.

In fact, the Shaman had long expected that Shao Xuan would refuse him. He just didn't expect Shao Xuan to have such a firm refusal.

Speaking about the Shaman's savage hunt of an heir... Well, let's just say it was a long story.

Being the whole tribe's spiritual guide meant that the Shaman must take it very seriously when finding an heir. So, a few Shamans in recent history had all spent a lot of time and energy in selecting their successors.

When Gui He, the team leader of the other hunting team, was little, he was chosen by the Shaman, and the Shaman intended to cultivate him from a young age. Also, the Shaman named him "Gui He".

The name "Gui He" came from the blessing chant "All water belongs to the gully". One could see how much expectation the Shaman had for this child.

However, it was a shame that back then, the Shaman was working on the research of a few newly-found plants. He became so obsessed with it that he forgot to keep an eye on Gui He. When he was less busy and realized the importance of cultivating the child, he found that Gui He already had his goal set on becoming a strong warrior. All he wanted was to pursue the pinnacle of power and nothing else would ever distract him.

Gui He admired and respected the Shaman just like everyone else in the tribe. He would literally start a death fight if he heard any bad words about the Shaman. However, ever since he had his own mind, all he wanted to be was a powerful warrior.

The Shaman wasn't mad about Gui He's goal. However, he started to rethink.

The main priority of the people in the tribe was to become powerful warriors, and they had a very persistent pursuit of strength. Forcing someone to alter his goal wouldn't make him into a qualified Shaman. The successor must be someone willing.

After Gui He, the Shaman began to pay attention to other people in the tribe.

However, since everyone wanted to become warriors, the Shaman thought perhaps he could choose from those who had yet to awaken. If one couldn't be awakened, will he or she be willing to become the next shaman?

It really didn't matter if the shaman had totem power or not. As long as he or she was a qualified successor, he or she could naturally obtain the inherited power of the shaman from him.

As for the totem power.... Well, it would be useless after one becomes the shaman. Because, the shaman would never leave the tribe.

The shaman of the tribe must remain in the safe region. No one would ever dare to guarantee that no accident would happen. So normally, the shaman would never step out of the tribe once he inherited the power and responsibilities from his predecessor. No one in the tribe would ever let the shaman step into a dangerous place.

If one chief was gone, they could always select the next strongest person to be the next chief. However, it wasn't the case with the shaman. Every shaman

was raised and cultivated since childhood. Once the candidate was selected, the shaman would keep the candidate by his side and teach by lectures and examples.

As for the “requirements” for the potential candidate... No one knew, and no one could tell. It was totally up to the present shaman.

There had been male, female, totem warrior, and non-totem warrior shamans. So, the awakening of totem power was no decisive factor of being selected. However, about twenty years after the birth of Gui He, the Shaman found no one suitable for being the candidate. He would constantly go down the mountain top to see the kids at the mountain foot area. But, he was disappointed every time.

Until one day, Gui He carried his newborn daughter to the Shaman, asking for the Shaman’s honor to name his little girl. The Shaman was tempted again once he laid eyes on the infant in Gui He’s arms. He named her “Gui Ze”. It was also a name that came from a blessing chant.

“All earth returns to the mansion, while all water belongs to the gully. Insects do not labor, by the blessing of nature.....”

So, since childhood, Gui Ze was raised and cultivated as the next shaman. Only a few people living on the mountaintop were aware of that.

However, the Shaman didn't expect to meet Shao Xuan.

Ever since his awakening, Shao Xuan wasn't like the others. The Shaman had been paying extra attention to him ever since. Moreover, his view of Shao Xuan was improved by Shao Xuan's every moves and actions as time went by.

If we say that it was because of his physique that he could make faster progress than the others. Then, how should we explain when Shao Xuan could see the things that others couldn't see? What about Shao Xuan's recovering ability that was better than an intermediate totem warrior?

And now he understood the Shaman Volumes!

Why did he obtain such power?

In fact, the Shaman had no explanation for that. He learnt that Shao Xuan had a complete flame inside his body the day he awakened. Whilst other people in the tribe only had an incomplete flame. However, meanwhile, he seemed to have some kind of shaman power. He could see the things that the other warriors couldn't see.

When a shaman determined that it was the right time, he would pass on all his power to his successor. However, Shao Xuan seemed to have acquired it without inheriting it from the Shaman.

Was he the offspring from a former Shaman? But that still made no sense, for the shaman would totally pass on his or her power to the successor completely, nothing was held back. The shamans were people of no selfish intentions. Their loyalty was to their tribe.

Also, after re-examining a few animal skin rolls of the family trees in the tribe, he was positive that Ah-Xuan's ancestors were ordinary warriors.

Until now, the Shaman had no exact answers to all his questions, but he decided not to tangle with that.

As he was about to persuade Shao Xuan into taking his place, he was refused by Shao Xuan firmly.

“Are you certain?” The Shaman asked a further question, which was rare.

Shao Xuan looked at the Shaman in silence. He was different from the members of the tribe in terms of concepts, thinking, and principles of dealing with things. He was very different, so how could he become their spiritual guide? However, all those reasons must be kept to himself.

“Fine.” The Shaman sighed and left the question behind. He asked: “Have you read all those animal skin rolls?”

“Yes, I have.”

“Do you understand?”

“Yes, I do.”

“Then, do you want to read more of the Shaman Volumes?” asked the Shaman.

“Yes, I do.” There were a lot of things recorded in the Shaman Volumes that amazed Shao Xuan deeply. Meanwhile, he guessed that there would be more secrets buried in the more ancient Shaman Volumes. If he wanted to have a better understanding of the tribe, he needed to start with the shaman. And the Shaman Volumes were excellent historical books.

“Then I can bring you more of the Shaman Volumes.” The Shaman said slowly.

Shao Xuan said nothing about it right now, instead he was waiting for the things that the Shaman would say.

The Shaman raised his head and glanced over the stone table that had different kinds of herbs on it. He continued: “I hope that you will help Gui Ze.”

“Of course, I’ll do that.” Shao Xuan intended to tell Gui Ze the things he knew even without the Shaman’s demand. To help the others was to help oneself. The herbs that were packed before a hunting mission were all prepared by Gui Ze. Shao Xuan would be happy if he could help with that and raise Gui Ze’s efficiency.

The Shaman nodded, satisfied. He was getting old after all, and he already had a lot on his plate. He was willing to teach Gui Ze, but the flesh was weak. It was impossible for him to take care of every aspect. The way of processing different herbs couldn’t be fully delivered by him to Gui Ze. In fact, Gui Ze gained her knowledge from others. For example, Gui Ze would master the processing methods of the heart piercing stem better if someone were to teach her.

In the past, the Shaman thought that Gui Ze would naturally understand the things described in the Shaman Volumes once she inherited from him. So, he spent more time teaching her the right mind, attitude and view of the world. Also, he focused on the development and trend of the tribe. Those things were

the most important ones.

While Shao Xuan's presence today could well solve the problem.

The Shaman felt a little sorry, but on the bigger picture, he was satisfied with the situation. He stood up and intended to leave after talking with Shao Xuan about the herbs described in the Shaman Volumes.

Before leaving, the Shaman told Shao Xuan: "You come to my room in the mornings starting tomorrow. Some Shaman Volumes can't be brought in here. You can come to the medicine house in the afternoons."

"Okay." Answered Shao Xuan as he made a sincere salute towards the Shaman.

Since Gui Ze didn't return to the medicine house, Shao Xuan felt a little bored. He processed all the raw plants on the stone table. It wasn't very hard, since the only thing the herbs required was the pre-processing. He had seen Gui Ze process the herbs before, and he also learnt the way of processing from the Shaman Volumes that he read these days. He was aware of the things that he should be aware of. He was very skillful and proficient when processing them, just like when he was processing the heart piercing stem.

When leaving the medicine house and heading back home, Shao Xuan looked up in the sky.

Chacha was hovering over his head in the sky.

"Do you want to see it for yourself, since it is such a big world?" whispered Shao Xuan.



---

# Chapter 102 - Drawing a Shaman Volume

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

Early next morning, Shao Xuan came to the Shaman's stone room.

The animal skin roll that the Shaman passed onto Shao Xuan described the processing methods for ten rare animal medicines.

Shao Xuan assumed that the Shaman would only let him start with a few volumes pertaining to plants. But unexpectedly, when he was done with the volume, the Shaman asked: "Have you read it thoroughly?"

"Yes. I'm confident that I can harvest the entire medicinal part if I ever encounter these animals." Answered Shao Xuan.

"Um." The Shaman responded with that, and then said to the warriors guarding his door: "Don't let anyone in unless it's urgent."

Seeing the Shaman's behavior, Shao Xuan couldn't help but become serious as well. It seemed that the Shaman had something important to talk to him about.

"Sit over there."

The Shaman pointed to a short desk besides him, and took out a piece of blank animal skin roll, as well as a stone plate that had special pigments that could only be used by the Shaman.

Well, in this situation...

Shao Xuan probably understood what he meant.

“Do you know how the Shaman Volumes are made?” Asked the Shaman.

“No, I don’t.” Shao Xuan was a little confused, maybe the Shaman was not the only one who could make the Shaman Volumes?

Seeing the curiosity and confusion within Shao Xuan’s eyes, the Shaman explained slowly: “The totem power isn’t the only power.

totem power is a combination of the body and the spirit. Becoming a totem warrior is only the reflection of the body’s part. As for the spirit... Everyone has it within them, but the amount is very little.”

“Then... What is the other one?” asked Shao Xuan.

“The other one is the power of inheritance. The inheritance of spiritual consciousness.” Said the Shaman.

Every Shaman would inherit his or her predecessor’s ability, and one of the things that got passed down was enough power of inheritance.

“Since you can understand the contents of the Shaman Volumes, I believe that you’re not like the other normal ones. You should have more power of inheritance than others.” Explained the Shaman.

“The power of inheritance...how do you find it?” Shao Xuan asked.

The Shaman stared at Shao Xuan, and pointing one of his bony fingers between Shao Xuan’s eyebrows: “Ask the totem, and you’ll find the answer naturally.”

Shao Xuan closed his eyes, and began to feel the totem which existed in his mind.

Besides the two horns that were surrounded by dancing flames, he saw nothing else.

Just when Shao Xuan was feeling confused, he heard the Shaman whispering into his ears: "Look carefully."

Shao Xuan continued to observe the totem, and this time he paid extra attention to the details.

Suddenly something caught his attention when Shao Xuan looked at the bottom of the flames. He fixed his sight onto a pale blue flame.

There was more than one layer of flames.

Shao Xuan opened his eyes and asked tentatively: "Is it blue?"

The Shaman nodded with satisfaction. It's good that he could see it. As for how and where on earth Shao Xuan gained the power of inheritance...the Shaman had no idea, and he decided not to pay too much attention on that.

"How much inheritance did you see?" asked the Shaman.

Shao Xuan looked at the brush pen beside him and looked at the Shaman, "May I?"

The Shaman passed him a thin brush pen.

The brush pen was not exquisite in Shao Xuan's eyes, and it was not easy to write with, not so easy as a carbonized branch. But where would he find a carbonized branch right now? He could only write a stroke or two at a time with such a brush pen.

Shao Xuan first drew the outline of the totem on the blank animal skin roll in front of him.

The Shaman watched Shao Xuan draw the totem, and his smile became increasingly bigger. It was a nice totem, well drawn. It was much better than most of the drawings made by other people in the tribe. However, whether a Shaman could draw well was irrelevant. The lines and curls had very little to do with being a good Shaman.

"Over here." Shao Xuan drew a line around the flames that were covering the two horns. "This should be the power of inheritance, right?"

“Yes. This is the power of inheritance.” The Shaman said satisfactorily.

As the Shaman was about to say something, he heard Shao Xuan continue: “And here...here...as well, over here...oh, wait a second, over here there was a little...wait...let me recheck...”

The Shaman was completely stunned, and he forgot what he was about to say.

As Shao Xuan kept making strokes here and there, it caused the Shaman’s face to twitch over and over.

As Shao Xuan was drawing more strokes, the facial expression on the Shaman’s face became more and more stiff. He seemed to be happy and sad at the same time. There were also other emotions mixed in. It was quite complicated.

If he was talking with someone else, the Shaman might think that he made an error. However, it was Shao Xuan, and the Shaman knew it deep in his heart that Shao Xuan was telling the truth.

He had so much power of inheritance, and so much talent but he wanted to be a warrior!

The Shaman was bitter at heart, and he literally wanted to rush to the fire pit and make a sincere salute in front of all the ancestors.

“Distinguished ancestors, how could someone with so much power of inheritance and talent not want to become the next Shaman?!”

If the Shaman was a little younger and more hot-tempered, he would've probably raised his cane and chased after Shao Xuan.

After comparing the blue flames in his mind with the ones he drew on the animal skin roll, Shao Xuan looked up at the Shaman: "Well, that's all I got."

"That's all you got?" The Shaman clenched the cane as a thousand different emotions mixed in his heart. All the mixed emotions went down to a deep sigh.

Shao Xuan thought that it was not much, because the blue flames only took a small percentage of the whole flame. Shao Xuan heard the Shaman say that most of the people in the tribe did not have much power of inheritance. However, he had no idea what he meant with "not much", so he drew all of them out. If he had known the Shaman's standards earlier, he would definitely keep some of them to himself.

The Shaman stared at the totem with all the strokes on it, silently.

As Shao Xuan was wondering what happened with the Shaman, the Shaman started talking in a serious tone, "Excellent. Now it would be easier for you to draw."

Shao Xuan listened to the Shaman's explanation carefully about the method to draw a Shaman Volume.

"All the drawings on the Shaman Volumes are a combination of power of inheritance, consciousness, and lines. When these three factors mix and reach a balance, it becomes the Shaman Drawing. If the reader can use the power of inheritance and watch the drawing with consciousness, he would be able to interact with the consciousness of the drawing's creator. If one could precisely control the power of inheritance, he could even feel the creator's emotions and other senses at the time...."

It was up to the reader's and the drawer's capacity when it comes to the depth of the interaction. The stronger they were, the clearer would be interaction become...

The Shaman shared the theory and Shao Xuan listened, because he had to

know it if he wanted to make his own drawings.

When the Shaman had finished explaining, and Shao Xuan had memorized and understood most of it, he picked up the brush pen again to start making his first Shaman Drawing.

A beginner in the Shaman Volumes would always start practicing with copying the other Shaman Drawings. Because when you make a copy, there will be a guidance of consciousness that could walk you through the process.

After attentively having looked at one drawing in a Shaman Volume for a long time, Shao Xuan concentrated on the blank animal skin roll in front of him.

He raised his hand, and at the moment that his brush pen touched the animal skin roll, Shao Xuan stimulated all the power of inheritance he had, and began to draw in accordance with what the Shaman had told him.

At that point, Shao Xuan used all his power of inheritance, and all his energy was concentrated on the tip of his brush pen. It was the only thing that he cared about, and it was the only focus that he had in mind. With the guidance of the Shaman Volume, he slowly started drawing.

After one stroke, Shao Xuan was full of sweat, and it seemed that he had consumed all his strength. He almost collapsed, and heaved with heavy breaths.

Looking at the animal skin roll, he found that there was only a small circle painted on it.

Shao Xuan rubbed his sweat with his sleeve. He couldn't help but think that drawing on the Shaman Volume was too difficult. It was only one stroke, and looked like a simple circle. However, it was extremely difficult from the very start, and did not become any simpler in the whole process.

Hmm, was it because that he had not enough power of inheritance? Shao Xuan wondered to himself.

If the Shaman had known about Shao Xuan's thoughts, he would probably have hit him with the cane. When the Shaman himself had started copying, he made three stops to complete a circle. Shao Xuan finished his stroke without one single stop! It was rare, even throughout all the generations in the shaman history.

---



# Chapter 103 - It's Not About the Appearance

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

Shao Xuan spent the whole morning drawing that complete circle, and he was exhausted. If in the past, he would never believe something like that would ever happen. However, now he experienced it himself. It could be so exhausting doing a painting, especially the spirit.

When coming out of the stone house, Shao Xuan looked around and felt that all the houses in his sight were spinning around.

He kept staring at the sky for some time, and finally the dizziness wore off. He only picked up the stone box that the Shaman gave him after he could finally stand steady on his feet. Shao Xuan headed to the medicine house to help Gui Ze process those herbs and plants.

Shao Xuan did not know what the Shaman had told Gui Ze, but when he taught her about the ways to process plants, she did not question it, and kept learning earnestly to better her ways in processing the herbs.

Compared with drawing a Shaman Volume, processing medicinal plants was so much easier. When the sun came down and he stepped out of the medicine

house to head back home, he was not that tired at all.

Inside the stone box given by the Shaman, there were two animal skin rolls, some special Shaman pigments, and a brush pen. The Shaman did not have all day to teach Shao Xuan, so he had to practice by himself for most of the time.

The stone box was covered in a grass net, and it swung around in the air when Shao Xuan brought it back.

“This is...?” Old Ke asked seeing Shao Xuan having brought back a stone box.

“It’s a task given by the Shaman.” Although the Shaman told Shao Xuan to practice by himself and provided the necessary materials, they were not meant for Shao Xuan to waste. The scripts of the practice must be presented to the Shaman later. So it should be counted as a task.

At those words, Old Ke became serious and full of respect immediately. He was even looking at the box with sincere respect. He did not dare to open the box, and stopped all his question once he heard that Shao Xuan was about to do the painting. In his mind, whatever comes out from the Shaman’s mouth was absolutely a right and meaningful thing.

“You should never let the Shaman down!” Old Ke said in a serious tone.

Entering his own room, Shao Xuan took out the animal skin rolls. There were two of them in the stone box, one was a completely blank one, and the other was the one he used in the morning, and now it had a circle on it.

Shao Xuan unfolded the animal skin roll and took out the pigment, as well as the brush pen. On second thought, Shao Xuan took out a carbonated pen that he made himself, and intended to try to start with that.

When Shao Xuan began to stimulate the power of inheritance, he quickly moved his waist in a sharp angle before he could write anything on the animal skin roll.

With a light crack, the carbonated pen broke into small pieces and fell on the stone desk. If Shao Xuan had been slower earlier, those small pieces would’ve directly fallen on the animal skin roll.

As expected, not any random pen could be used to make a Shaman Volume.

The brush pen that the Shaman gave Shao Xuan was made from the furs of ferocious beast and some special timber.

Giving up on other kinds of pens, Shao Xuan obediently picked up the brush pen given by the Shaman, and started painting.

Since it was copy practice, of course he would continue with the circle that he had drawn this morning. After the first attempt, he was more practiced in the second time.

He was not drawing fast. When Shao Xuan finished with that circle and returned to reality, he noticed that it was already dark, it took him at least an hour to finish,

Compared with his first try in the morning, the second time took no less time. But the good thing was, this time, Shao Xuan was not as exhausted as the last time, and he was not feeling so dizzy.

It was progress.

In the following days, Shao Xuan would take the stone box to the Shaman's place every morning. However, the Shaman was busy with errands, so Shao Xuan would sit in a smaller room in the back of the stone house to practice his drawing. When there was a question or a problem, he would go to the Shaman when the Shaman was free. On the other hand, the Shaman was so busy these days, that he had no spare energy or time to pay attention to Shao Xuan's work.

After five days, the winter officially came.

The temperature dropped sharply overnight.

Shao Xuan opened his door in the morning, and all he could see was white.

In the giant bird nest on the roof, Chacha was looking down with his neck stretched. Seeing Shao Xuan, he flapped his wings to shake off the snow, and flew up.

Shao Xuan did not force Chacha to sleep outside. When it was almost winter, Chacha still had no intention of coming inside the cabin. Now with the heavy snow, he still didn't change his mind to avoid the coldness. Since he could bear it, Shao Xuan chose not to meddle with Chacha's lifestyle. He was not some pet bird after all, and he would need to eventually learn to survive the coldness once he grew big enough and returned to the woods. He could not spoil Chacha.

Caesar and Chacha followed Shao Xuan up to the mountaintop, and when Shao Xuan arrived, Caesar went down the mountain by himself, while Chacha flew to other places to hunt for food. Seeing this, they were well trained.

Shao Xuan arrived at the stone house, and found that both of the team leaders of the hunting teams, Ta and Gui He, were here.

He made a salute and walked inside with the stone box, without disturbing them. He headed to the smaller room to continue practicing.

Those two team leaders only knew that Shao Xuan was learning something

about herbs from the Shaman, and they thought him a lucky boy. What a great honor to learn from the Shaman himself! Everyone in the tribe had the same thought.

They would never have guessed what Shao Xuan was truly learning right now.

With the animal skin roll unfolded, Shao Xuan did not start practicing just yet. Before, when he entered the room, he heard the two team leaders apologizing.

In the past year, they had found quite a lot of herbs, but among them, there was a considerable percentage of wrong ones. A lot of plants looked alike, and they were difficult to identify correctly. Even though they had animal skin rolls with the pictures of the plants, but it was unavoidable that they brought back some wrong ones every time. For example, the plants and herbs brought back by Gui He were not all the right ones, and some of them needed to be picked out.

It was a gap during the communication.

The Shaman could not specifically tell all hunting warriors the things that he needed. Simple verbal description was far from enough. There was no actual picture, no real processing. So the accuracy remained to be improved during the communication.

It was no one's fault, for after all, not everybody could understand the content of the Shaman Volumes like Shao Xuan did.

What if someday in the future, when everyone could read the Shaman Volumes!

Thinking about that, Shao Xuan looked at the stone desk in front of him.

There was an incomplete Shaman Volume on the desk. Shao Xuan began to read it, but the content surprised him somehow.

It was telling the things about agriculture. However, sadly, the images emitted by the volume were not clear enough.

It was a copy of some ancient Shaman Volume. No one knew how many times it had been copied, and the original consciousness was already blurred.

When copying an ancient Shaman Volume, it was like relaying or forwarding someone else's thought, for the copier could not see the actual scene. And making a second copy was like rephrasing someone else's rephrase. Personal feelings and comments were unavoidable.

For example, when one person relayed another one's words, the meaning would be almost the same. However, with more people doing so, would the sentence be all the same as the original one?

It was highly likely to change a little.

Compared with the original Shaman Volumes, the copies of ancient Shaman Volumes still had the content, but the content was blurred, and not as clear as the original. Such as the copy laying in front of Shao Xuan.

The Shaman had no personal experience in agriculture and farming, of course he could not copy the exact intention of the original author.

The one on the desk should be made by the Shaman, copying something passed down by his predecessors. Since the Shaman left it in here, he obviously did not intend to hide it from Shao Xuan.

Shao Xuan spent some time reading the Shaman's animal skin roll. Although it was not clear, he was positive that the scene drawn on the animal skin was not happening in the tribe. The place in the painting was more like somewhere on a flatland. There were vast farmlands with fertile soil. Some things were planted in the ground, and some people were busy caring for those plants in the fields.

It was a shame that nowadays, the tribe was located in somewhere not suitable for farming. Also, people in the tribe had no intentions of doing any kinds of similar activities. It was enough for them to find some edible plants in the training grounds and nearby mountains.

The Shaman probably would never personally see the scene described in that animal skin roll...Perhaps he wanted Shao Xuan to experience the same dream

for the tribe, so he left this animal skin roll in here. Indeed, for every person in the tribe, seeing something like that would be totally breathtaking.

However, even the Shaman was not aware of Shao Xuan's unique background.

Putting the animal skin roll aside, Shao Xuan continued on his own practice. Now, he was not copying the Shaman's work. Instead, he was making his own drawing.

The thing he wanted to draw now was something he saw in the grassland. After pondering for some time, and then a hard time finishing the picture, Shao Xuan looked at the stroke he made. If you looked at the symbolic stroke alone, you would hardly connect it with the plants on the grass land, for the stroke was like a curvy earthworm.

However, it was not about the appearance. The important thing was whether one could portray the picture in one's mind.

For Shao Xuan, he already succeeded in doing that.

A classmate majoring in archaeology from Shao Xuan's former life once said, "Prehistoric art is the existence of prehistoric ideology, rather than the existence of aesthetic sense or the existence of aesthetic ideology."

Back then, Shao Xuan did not understand what he was saying. But now, he understood.

The creator of the Shaman Volumes all lived in his current era. They were only using the method of art to preserve their thoughts and knowledge, with the help of the power of inheritance. That's all, and it had nothing to do with the appearance.

Thinking about that, Shao Xuan felt calmer.

Looking at the picture he made moments ago, Shao Xuan thought: If this thing were shown to the archaeologists in his previous life, they would never have guessed what these messy strokes described.

---



# Chapter 104 - The Twins

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

In the afternoon, when Shao Xuan left the medicine house to go back home, it was not dark yet. The herbs were almost done, and recently, there was not that much work to do. So, Shao Xuan planned to go back home earlier to practice drawing.

However, not long after Shao Xuan left the medicine house, he stopped and listened carefully, as some noise entered his ears. Without hesitation, he took a turn and walked towards the source of the noise.

Somewhere between the mountain side and the mountaintop, there was a special place. It was a training place especially built by the warriors. However, it was not a place for the warriors to train themselves, instead, it was designed for the non-awakened kids living at or above the mountain side district.

Kids living up in the mountain would start training real early, and here was their main training place. However, due to limited space, when someone was practicing tossing, the others must be cleared out of the place, so they don't get hurt by the tossed wooden or stone tools. All the kids here hadn't awakened their totem power yet, so they're strength was limited.

Most of the children that could train here were from the “powerful families” that lived up in the mountain, with their parents or grandparents holding essential positions in the tribe. They should be at least families of the group leaders of the small hunting groups, or else he or she could not find a place in here, and would probably be excluded sooner or later.

The class inequality existed in every society.

Shao Xuan had never trained himself in that place as a kid. Later on, when his totem power awakened, he had watched the other kids train in there for some time when he was coming up the mountain once.

Now it was winter and snowing heavily. Under such conditions, the training place was still very crowded and noisy. It seemed that there were a lot of people over there.

As Shao Xuan walked nearer, the noise became clearer.

Compared with the mountain foot area, the roads and paths in the upper half of the mountain were all cleared up, even with the heavy snow in the winter. Some non-awakened kids would come outside with thick clothes made from animal skin. Most of them did not lack food back at home, and the animal skins they wore were all of good quality. Even if it was freezing cold outside, the coldness would not threaten their lives.

Along the cleared-out path, Shao Xuan came to this training ground for kids. There were almost a hundred people in this place, and they varied from 5-6 year olds to teens.

Since none of them could fight against the coldness as totem warriors, the kids in the training place were wrapped like chinese rice dumplings.

Right then, there were three kids in the middle of the crowd, and Shao Xuan knew two of them.

They were the twins of Mai and Qiao named Yang and Guang.

Yangguang meant sunshine in the local language, however, it was separated in two words to name the twins. Mai and Qiao were their parents. Ah-Yang was the boy, and he was born one step ahead of his sister Ah-Guang.

Twins rarely existed in the tribe. For now, Yang and Guang were the only twins in the tribe. The Shaman personally checked in on them when they were born.

Yang and Guang were one year younger than Shao Xuan, and they had not awakened their totem power. However, they were quite talented and had good physiques. By the end of this winter, Mai planned to send his twins into the pre-selection group to present them in front of the Shaman.

Ah-Guang was noted for her strength by many people in the tribe ever since she was born. Everyone thinks that she will be awakened for sure once she reaches the age. She was just not going to be easy to deal with. Compared with Ah-Guang, Ah-Yang as the brother, was not that extraordinary. However, he was much gentler and would not argue with anyone. When Ah-Guang was in a fight with the others, he would even come forward and separate her away. They had quite opposite characters.

[Don't you dare pick up those pink-glasses, it's not a flag.]

Of course, that was only the story that went around.

Being one of the close friends with Mai and Qiao, naturally, Shao Xuan knew that the real situation was not like that.

It was true that Ah-Guang was born with strength, and she could fight against two kids of her age. However, when it comes to her impulsive temper, irritability and her love towards fighting...they were all not true.

People in the tribe had different attitudes towards boys and girls. If a boy got punched by a girl, people would say, "Well, it's not like you are going to lose anything by being punched once."

But if the two parties were switched around?

That would be total darned! How absurd was that! Without even other people saying anything, the parents of the boy would teach him a lesson by beating him even harder.

This had nothing to do with the gentlemanly manner or anything similar. That was all bullshit in the minds of the people of the tribe. In here, every Shaman valued the protection of the girls, for it mattered a lot with the future and reproduction of the tribe. The proportion of men and women of the tribe was not equal, and there were less girls born annually. Therefore, many Shamans over the generations were all very worried about that.

If there were some other tribes nearby, then the young fellows could just lure in some brides from the other tribes. However, their own tribe seemed to be the only tribe in the region. If you excluded those young people related to each other by blood, there were even fewer who could be couples. Now, there were quite a lot of eternal bachelors in the tribe. If Old Ke hadn't been injured back then, perhaps he would have had grandkids.

That was also the reason why the young warriors would show off like peacocks flaunting their tails, when they walked on the Path of Glory every time. They needed to show off their hunt and thus their ability.

Just because of the different attitudes people had for different genders, every time when violence was needed to deal with the situation, or when there was someone that messed with them, Ah-Guang would be the one to fight in the front, while her brother, Ah-Yang, acted as the one holding his sister back. He would constantly tell her to "stop it" and "let it go", together with "sorry for that" and "she is just a little hot-tempered".

[If you don't get it, they're cunning.]

Just like now, the twins were having problems with the other party. Ah-Guang was using both her legs and arms to fight, and she wanted to fight them brutally. However, her brother was holding her back, as she tried several times but failed kicking the others.

However, she did succeed a few times, if not, where did all the footprints on

the boy's body come from?

Ah-Yang was holding his sister back, seeming to calm her down. However, just when a kid from the other party stepped out of the crowd, he got kicked at by Ah-Guang. She missed him by inches, but still left a footprint on his animal skin clothes. That one stepped back again.

Was it true that Ah-Yang was not able to hold his sister back?

Even a ghost would not buy it!

These two kids were equal on strength, if he really wanted to stop his sister, then it wouldn't be too difficult.

The twins were still very young, and they were not as simple and unpretentious as their parents. Instead, they had quite a wicked sense of humor. If they had learnt some simple traps from Shao Xuan today, then they would use them to trick others tomorrow.

Seeing that there was someone whose totem power was awakened was about to step out, Shao Xuan called on her first, "Guang, Guang!"

Everyone looked at him following the voice.

Seeing that it was Shao Xuan, Ah-Guang immediately smiled, even though she was angry one moment before. She "got rid of" the hold of her brother, and ran towards Shao Xuan. She was wearing a lot, with a clock on her back. When running, she looked like a moving dumpling.

Ah-Guang stared at Shao Xuan as if he could be her backer. Pulling Shao Xuan's arm, she said, "They are bullying me, brother Ah-Xuan!"

The few people who just got kicked by Ah-Guang were totally stunned at her accusation. What the Fuck! That's total bullshit! Anyone with eyes could see clearly who were the victims!

People were looking at Shao Xuan with different expressions on their faces.

Some young kids had no idea of who Shao Xuan was, and they did not care much either. But the relatively older ones were different, especially those who had awakened together with Shao Xuan. Let alone the fact that Shao Xuan made great contributions to the tribe, and had joined the advance group, he

was now learning from the Shaman! It was like a shining halo above his head.

Because of that, even though Shao Xuan was someone with no background, and once lived in the orphan cave, no one here would dare to exclude him and ask him to leave.

Ku was standing behind the crowd, and he was having more complicated emotions. Being one of the kids from the orphan cave, he was one of the more admired ones last year during this time. However, now, everyone was talking about Shao Xuan. And everyone had kept doing so for a long time.

It had only been one year, and now things had changed that much.

---

# Chapter 105 - This Is Nothing Difficult

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

After listening to the twins describing the whole situation, Shao Xuan finally understood why there was a fight

Although in the eyes of the people living in the mountain foot area, the group leader of small hunting groups were already remarkable people, however, things were different up here. Qiao and Mai were far from the upper class.

As far as Shao Xuan knew, there were quite a lot of kids here, with their parents serving as small hunting group leaders in the hunting teams. That was nothing much, but their grandparents had been in important or even crucial positions in the tribe. For example, the team leader, the chef, and some kids even had some predecessors that were the Shaman in the tribe. The reputation and family power had been piling up for centuries, and they had obvious advantages over other people in the tribe, and were as well highly respected for their positions.

Compared with that, the twins from Mai and Qiao were only some kids with rich parents but no background.



Also, the twins barely went to this training place for kids, instead, they would be brought to the real training grounds by their parents. Many children had similar experiences. They had someone protecting them from being hurt, surrounded by awakened totem warriors. However, it was winter now. In the past, Yang and Guang were both young, and they would refuse to go outside during winter. So they had never been to this special “kids” training ground in the past.

The twins were friends with most of the kids related to Mai’s hunting group, and they were not so familiar with other kids up in the mountaintop. But this year, the twins decided to have a proper training and exercise in order to have their totem powers awakened by the end of the season.

It was just that they did not fully understand the situation in this training place, as well as the rules in here.

Since it was a training place especially designed and developed for kids, no adult would ever meddle with the affairs in the training place. Both the management and the rules were set by the non-awakened kids. Even their ancestors had their teen period. Many of the rules set by them were still used till now.

Well, the rule in here was: You must hang your nameplate if you want to train yourself here.

The so called “Hang your nameplate” meant that you must put a stone plate with your name carved on it on the tall stone tree, which was on the edge of the training ground. You would only have the authority to enter the training place after you did that.

There was a stone tree by the edge of the training place. When Shao Xuan first saw it, he assumed it to be a telephone pole or something. When he got closer to it and observed it while touched it with his hands, he realized that it was not a telephone pole, but a real tree.

This stone tree had a long history, perhaps it was already hundreds of years old. It was said that the stone tree had existed when the training place was first built. However, it was growing very slow. Even after 10 years, you couldn’t see its growth.

The ancestors left this tree here, and now the tree became the one who decides the eligibility of whoever that enters the training place.

The stone tree had the width of nearly two people, and was over 50 meters tall. It was thin but tall, and there were a few branches on the top, while the rest of it was pure trunk. In other seasons, people would climb along the trunk until they hung their name plates on one of the branches. One day in the future, when they became a real totem warrior, they would climb up the stone tree again to fetch their nameplates back as a final farewell to this training place.

It was as equal to a sincere ceremony, and became a tradition over the centuries.

Normally, that was not so difficult a task for the twins. Although the tree looked like stone, but the trunk's surface was rough like bark, just like any other tree. Climbing up was not too hard for them.

Normally, the rules could be altered a little under special occasions. For example, in a weather like this, it was totally impossible to climb a stone tree. However, today the situation was a little tricky.

Two packs of kids were about to have a fight, and whoever wins could train in the training place for the next twenty days, while the lost party would not be allowed to stay in here any longer.

These kinds of fights existed every winter, because many kids were preparing for the awakening at the end of the season. In order to keep fit and maintain the best condition for the pre-selection before winter ends, they would fight as hard as they could to win training time in this place.

This was the only open ground in the upper half of the mountain which was suitable for things like throwing and other kinds of trainings. There were a few open grounds in the mountain foot area, but they did not want to go there.

Moreover, having a spot in this training place represented one's status. Being brought in here meant great honor, even if one was only standing in the training place, watching the others train. Ku, for example, was brought here by someone else. It was just that he was not qualified enough to train himself here, for he did not hang his nameplate on the stone tree. Even so, he often

bragged about this experience to other kids in the mountain foot area.

Originally, the training schedule told kids to take turns to do the training, for example, one party could come here and train themselves for the first ten days, and then the other party for the next ten days, and so on in turns. However, every time in this season, it became a total combat of physical strength.

Naturally, people in the tribe handled all the problems with violence.

Many people in the tribe believed that it was beneficial for kids of the tribe to fight each other, and they admired this violent way to solve problems.

No matter whose turn it was to use this training place, everyone's thoughts were the same: We need to use this place right now. Will you step aside? No? Then let's fight.

Winning meant being right, no matter what. Losing meant being wrong, no matter what.

In this training place, fighting over territories was always handled like that.

Whenever this time came, every party would call on their friends and families to come over to help, including the already-awakened totem warriors. Shao Xuan saw Mao and Mo-Er. Normally, they would not meddle with the fights by participating. Instead, the awakened totem warriors were only here to observe as well as cheer them on.

The two parties belonged to two different camps. Some of them were from Ta's hunting team, and the others were from Gui He's hunting team.

Just then, the twins, Yang and Guang, came to join the crowd. Their friends from one party naturally welcomed their joining, however, the other party disagreed and suppressed them by the tradition, and said that they should stick to it. Then, arguments became fights, and the twins did not hold back their temper, but chose to kick them directly.

The kid that just got kicked by Ah-Guang taunted the twins for "Being afraid of the height".

Having learnt what happened exactly, Shao Xuan looked at that stone tree.

Unlike other trees, the stone tree had a thick layer of ice on its surface. With the premise of not damaging the stone tree, it was very difficult for anyone to climb up and hang the nameplate on the top.

Even a totem warrior would hesitate if he or she had to climb up under that condition.

Watching the twins wrapped in thick animal skin clothes like two fat dumplings, Shao Xuan glimpsed at the 50 meter tall tree. The twins would just slip down along the trunk once they jumped on the tree, let alone climbing up.

“No stone tools allowed?” asked Shao Xuan.

“No. That would damage the stone tree. But you can always use ropes.” The one who answered was of the same age with Yang and Guang. He was very arrogant, and had a fierce face.

After that, Meng smirked at the twins, as if saying, ‘Aren’t you proud of your strength? Now you can use it!’

“His name is Meng. He is the worst! He is the one who stopped us from entering.” Ah-Guang filled Shao Xuan in.

The weather was very cold, with icy wind and heavy snow in the air. Many non-awakened children were freezing in the air. They thought that the twins should just give it up, for they could not be able to do so anyway. Why waste the time? They wanted to see the final fight! They were not here to freeze in the cold.

“So, what do you want now?” Shao Xuan looked at the twins.

These two kids’ looks became depressed immediately. Even though they were full of tricks usually, they could not think of anything that they could do.

“Actually, I think that this thing can wait. Later when we finish the fight, this place would belong to us for the next twenty days. You can train in here later.” Mao came towards them and said.

One child behind Meng sneered at Mao’s words, “As if you could just win the combat!”

The two parties were only one step away from entering another quarrel, Shao Xuan shook his head. The combat between the two parties was one thing, but the qualifications of entering the place was still the topic that they clung to.

“In fact, this is not that difficult.” Said Shao Xuan.

Kids from the two parties all looked at Shao Xuan immediately by hearing his words.

Not that difficult?

He must be bragging!

Not only Meng and his companions, people from Mao’s side also looked at Shao Xuan curiously. They had no clue why Shao Xuan said that.

“No stone tools allowed?” asked Shao Xuan again.

“Sure!” said Meng.

“No help from other people?”

“Definitely!”

“So aside from that, any means are allowed?”

“Yes, you bet!”

“Then this is simple.”

As saying so, Shao Xuan put two fingers in his mouth under the curious stare

of many eyes, and whistled.

---



# Chapter 106 - It Turned out to Be an Option

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

The whistle went afar in the snow and wind.

At Shao Xuan's whistle, many people looked curious and confused, for they had no idea why Shao Xuan was doing that. However, some other kids seemed to have thought of something, and they looked up in the sky with stunned faces.

"Ah!"

The twins shouted excitedly, for they had already guessed Shao Xuan's way of solving this problem. They stared at the sky, and even the falling snow did not stop them from keeping their eyes wide open, for they were afraid of missing any details.

"What the hell is going on?" Meng asked the other kids behind him.

"That eagle....."

Meng looked up in the sky, along the same direction that his companions were pointing at.

A little black dot appeared in the sky, and soon, the small dot became bigger and bigger. Even the big flying flakes could not hide its body as it was flew closer.

“It’s Chacha! Chacha!” The twins were so excited that they wanted to jump up high. They knew Shao Xuan well, so they were familiar with Chacha.

However, the others had different opinions.

For many people in the tribe, Chacha was in the same position as Caesar. They were only surviving in the tribe because the Shaman allowed them to be kept within the tribe. Many would even think that animals like Caesar and Chacha had already lost their qualification of being a prey, because they didn’t have the ferocious nature like the animals in the wild anymore. People did not see them as ferocious beasts any more. Even without the Shaman’s blessing, they would not try to hunt Caesar and Chacha down, for that was no challenge.

Like most of the totem warriors, they felt that hunting meant the pursuit of extreme strength. Hunting down more ferocious beasts always brought more excitement and meaning. An animal that had lost its ferocious nature was useless for them.

Normally, they would often see that eagle flying around in the sky. However, never had they thought about what this eagle would do eventually.

They were not stupid, but the traditional thoughts and views had already trapped them in the ancient philosophy for centuries. Of course they would not think about other uses of animals, including the twins.

Chacha hovered above in the sky, but without flying down to land.

Shao Xuan made a gesture with his hand, and people saw that eagle in the sky flying towards Shao Xuan.

“From that far away...the bird could literally see Shao Xuan waving his hand?!” Someone whispered in the crowd.

“My dad once said that eagles could see a rabbit from afar...” Said another kid.

“That’s so cool!!”

“So it can also see the dangers and risks from afar? If so, my dad wouldn’t have to risk his life in the hunting missions anymore.” Someone said in a low voice.

The whispering stopped suddenly at that sentence.

Yes...If it could see the dangers afar and alert people in advance... Perhaps some unnecessary risks could be avoided when people were in the wild, hunting.

Everyone was thinking like that.

However, they still did not think that a beast could do such a thing. Animals were animals. They could not talk like people do, and even a eagle was merely a bird that could fly.

Whoosh!

A black shadow swept over in a flash, and even the snowflakes around them were pushed away.

People looked over to its direction.

Flapping his wings, Chacha landed on Shao Xuan's arm steadily.

There were many people around, but Chacha was not timid at all. His eagle eyes looked around the crowd, and then he began to peck on his feathers, as if there was nobody around.

Shao Xuan lowered his arm so that the twins could have a good talk with Chacha.

"Chacha, please help me put this on the top branch! That tree, yes. There are branches on its top. Any branch could do the trick..." Yang and Guang took out their stone name plates and talked to Chacha.

The stone plates were not big, only half the size of a kid's palm, and there was a little hole pierced on top of the stone plate, so that a leather rope could go through the hole. Most of the kids in the upper half of the mountain had similar stone plates. Some were prepared before they were even born, and some were prepared after their birth. Many people wouldn't even be using this kind of stone plates, they would make one for their kids, seeing that other kids had them.

The stone plates were all made from fine or excellent stone cores, and the leather rope was made from the skin of ferocious beasts, so it won't break easily.

As Yang and Guang were talking to Chacha, the others kept staring at them. Most people did not believe that an animal could understand human words. Seeing that the twins were talking to Chacha like that, they looked astonished.

"Can it understand them?"

"Many beasts in the forests are clever."

“But even if it could understand the meaning, would it do such a thing accordingly?”

“I guess not...My dad said that birds in the forests are all fierce! How would it listen to our words and do as we say?”

As some kids were sharing their knowledge about the birds, and eagles in particular, they looked up and saw the twins touching that eagle with their hands. Everyone became silent, but kept staring at them.

Chacha was a little annoyed, for the twins touched him every time.

Seeing Chacha pecking on the hands of the twins, people's hearts all got pulled up. Even Meng and some young totem warriors standing aside kept staring at the twins. Of course, those who had hunting experiences had a better understanding of the ferocious birds.

The one who got kicked by Ah-Guang smirked in his heart. See? You got pecked! It's said that one peck of an eagle would cause severe injury!

However, to everyone's surprise, the twins got pecked on the hands, but their hands remained unscratched.

Sure enough, the bird was being kept for too long, and now it did not know how to peck the others! Its soft peak was no longer like those birds in the forests. Some people seemed to be disdain seeing that. Until someone at Mao's side approached Chacha with a long wooden stick. He wanted to touch the bird as well, but dared not to do so with his own hand. In the end, he decided to use a wood stick.

However, before the wooden stick could get any nearer, Chacha flapped his wings and pecked hard on the stick.

Duh!

The guy's hand that was holding the wooden stick felt a little numb. If you looked at the wooden stick, you'd find that a hole had appeared on it. If the stick hadn't been that thick, it would've just been pierced through by Chacha.

Now, no one dared to say anything.

If anyone still had questions, he may test Chacha with his own hands. However, no one was that idiotic to do it.

Chacha wanted to wave his claws towards that boy with the wooden stick, but was stopped by Shao Xuan.

“Whoever approaches without a permission will get attacked.” Said Shao Xuan.

Then, the twins had finished talking with Chacha, and they presented their stone name plates to Chacha. The two stone plates were placed on top of each other, and a leather rope went through both of them.

“If you help us with this, I’ll ask for good meat from dad just for you, Chacha!” Said Ah-Guang.

“Go.” Shao Xuan raised his arm.

Chacha flapped his wings, and moved his feet. He grabbed the twins’ stone plates at the moment of flying up. In the blink of an eye, he was flying up into the sky.

Shao Xuan had done tons of similar trainings with Chacha, and some of the tasks were even more difficult. So, hanging the twins’ name plates on the branches was just a piece of cake to Chacha. Shao Xuan was not worried at all.

Down at the training place, people watched the flying eagle, heading towards the stone tree. Just as people were wondering when it was going to slow down, and what this bird would do when it got close to the trunk, Chacha did not slow down at all. Like a gust of wind, Chacha flew by a branch at the top.

Many people did not see Chacha’s moves clearly. In their eyes, the eagle was just sweeping by the top of the tree, doing nothing else.

“It did not do as commanded.” Someone said. He was saying it as if it was meant to be so, but still, there were traces of disappointment in his tone.

“No, the bird did it! The nameplates are already on there.” The one standing behind Meng said.

Unlike normal kids that had not been awakened, totem warriors had much better sight.

At the end of the sentence, people heard a slight sound of Ding from the top of the stone tree. It was the sound of the stone plates hitting the layer of ice at the top.

When the stone plates were hanging at the top, they would slip down along the tip of the branch. In such a weather, the leather ropes would soon be covered by layers of ice. So, no matter how strong the wind might be, the stone plates won't fall. When at the end of the season the ice layer would melt down, there would be a lot of gray leaves on the tips of the branches, which would also block the stone plates from being blown down by the wind. Unless someone climbed up and fetched the stone plates, normally, no matter how strong the wind was, the stone plates would not get blown off.

Meng was having a really complicated facial expression.

They used this way to complete the task! It turned out to be an option!

It did not break the rule either.

They had never thought about the possibility of that. In their minds, all animals, especially ferocious beasts, were only to be killed and eaten. The whole time, they were on opposite sides of humans.

Why would an animal behave like that? Caesar did so, and now the eagle did it too?

Everyone in the training place thought of something as they saw the eagle returning to Shao Xuan's arm.

Just when they could not manage to do it, or just when they could not do it perfectly no matter how hard they tried, now Shao Xuan provided a new option!

---



# Chapter 107 - Contest

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

When the task was completed, Shao Xuan allowed the already impatient Chacha to fly away.

If you thought about it, you'll find that Shao Xuan was taking advantage of the rules, and it was a form of bullying the others. However, now it was under a special occasion. The other party was constraining the twins to do things that were beyond their power. In the past, all the kids would make an exception, and no one had really climbed the stone tree in such a season.

Meanwhile, Shao Xuan knew the twins well. They had a persistent character. Although they had Chacha help them now, but after winter ends, the first thing they would do would be to climb up the stone tree to touch their stone plates which had their names. That would provide them with a sense of relief, which meant that they were qualified, right and proper.

As expected, when Chacha flew away, Ah-Guang gave a slight 'hum' at Meng's gloomy face and said: "If we do not awaken by the end of this winter, we will climb up again. Just wait and see!"

Ah-Yang nodded by her side: "I promise to do so as well."

Although Chacha already flew away, the earlier situation had left an image in many people's hearts. The impact may not be very deep, but in the future when they encounter similar tasks, they might think of this again.

Kids accept new things better than adults. Altering people's minds should always start with kids. Also, by the end of this winter, Shao Xuan planned to take Caesar out for a few hunting missions. He hoped that people would gradually accept his way of training wild animals.

The pictures that the ancestors painted on the walls in the stone room of the orphan cave consisted of scenes which showed that they hunted with hounds. Perhaps one day in the future, that grand scene will reappear. The Shaman also held the same opinion.

"Okay, now since things are handled, I'll head back." Shao Xuan said to the twins.

"Don't go brother Xuan! Later we will have a duel, and I'll also be joining the contest!" Said Ah-Guang.

Kids from Meng's side instantly began to yell at Ah-Guang's words.

"You can't join the contest Ah-Guang!"

"Yes, indeed! You can ask Ah-Yang to take your position!"

"I agree! Ah-Yang, how can you allow your sister to join?"

Earlier when they were messing with the twins, they did that out of two reasons. Firstly, the two parties were fighting over the training place, of course they would like to do something to upset the other party. Secondly, and more importantly, Ah-Guang was a girl and was born with strength. And if a girl with that strength entered the combat, Meng would have no proper person to fight with her. Now that someone said that Ah-Yang should fight the combat instead of Ah-Guang, many other kids began to second the proposal.

Shao Xuan looked at the bunch of kids and was smirking in his heart. What foolish kids they are! They were totally tricked by the twins. Just now, when someone said that Ah-Yang should join the combat, both the twins couldn't

help but smile a little.

It was a best of three game, and each party would send out three kids for the combat.

Shao Xuan, Mao and the others were watching the combat from afar.

The non-awakened kids had a very simple way of fighting each other. No stone tools allowed, as they would fight empty-handed. All the moves were learnt from their parents and other adults. However, due to the lack of real hunting experience and the lack of body strength, together with the fact that they were wearing too many clothes...the momentum of the fight was very much weakened.

Shao Xuan stood aside, watching kids from two opposite parties fighting each other. With that many clothes, they looked like fat dumplings colliding with each other. Shao Xuan almost laughed out loud, but the combat was something serious in the eyes of all the kids here. So, Shao Xuan tried hard to control his facial expression.

As Shao Xuan expected, two breaths after Ah-Yang joined the battle, he hit his opponent to the ground three times. On the fourth time, he punched his opponent on the face as he pinned him down on the ground, until his opponent admitted defeat. It seems like Ah-Yang had been holding back his temper for quite some time, and now he finally let it out.

Looking around, Shao Xuan found that aside from those who had known Ah-Yang well, all the others were looking funny.

In the end, Meng was the only one that won in his party. The other two, both were defeated, which meant that for the next twenty days, they should not enter the training place.

There was one merit about people in the tribe, which was that they won't find any excuse for failure. Also, after the defeat, they won't play dirty to set traps against the winners. If they fall, they rest and then stand up from where they fell. If they lose, they improve themselves and then fight back in the future.

The twins cheered with the others, and began discussing about bringing more stone tools to the training place.

The young warriors who were watching the combat intended to leave as well. But just when Shao Xuan was about to turn around, he heard someone from the other party shout: "Wait!"

"What? Do you have anything to say after being defeated? Unless you want to fight with someone, Lei?" Mao sneered.

This 'Lei' that Mao talked to was the one who was standing behind Meng earlier.

Lei had awakened one year before Shao Xuan and Mao. He was also older

than Shao Xuan when he was awakened. If you calculate it, you'll notice that he was two years older than Shao Xuan. He was the most outstanding warrior of his peers, and he always brought back the most game. After two years of being a totem warrior, he was now one head taller than Shao Xuan, given that he was much older than Shao Xuan as well.

Lei glimpsed at Mao, "Whoever of you could be my opponent if I join the fight?" He was saying that disdainingly, as if he would be bullying non-awakened kids if he joins the fight.

Before Mao could say anything back, Lei looked away as he looked at Shao Xuan, "We have someone on our side that wants to have a friendly challenge with Ah-Xuan. Normally, when Ah-Xuan is learning medicine from the Shaman, he is hard to find. Today, coincidentally we are all here. It's for the best that we have a little combat, so that the other non-awakened kids might have the chance to see what is real combat between totem warriors!"

When he was saying "Totem warriors", he said it full of pride. Not only Lei, the others were all excited to hear him say so.

Young totem warriors wanted to show off, while the non-awakened kids looked forward to it very much. Their fathers had their battles and competitions, and they had their own among the younger generation.

Just when Lei finished his words, someone from that party stepped out.

"Tai?" Mao frowned at the person that stepped out.

Tai had awakened in the same year as Shao Xuan and Mao. However, Shao Xuan did not know him well, since he was in the other hunting team.

Tai moved his wrists, stared at Shao Xuan, and said, "I heard that you are the most excellent one among our peers, and I have been wanting to challenge you for some time."

At Tai's words, someone from Mao's side could not bear it, "Who said that he is the most excellent one among our peers?"

“Shut up!” Mao glared at the one who spoke.

He was indeed unhappy to admit it, but he remembered clearly about what happened during that hunting mission. Shao Xuan was really doing far better than him. Also, if it weren't for Shao Xuan, he would probably have ended up in the belly of the Thorn Black Wind. His father also told him that he was the rival of Shao Xuan, for now.

Although, it had been half a year since when Ta had said that, and Mao was making progress in a faster speed than most of kids in the tribe. But he had no idea what Shao Xuan was capable of, because after that one time, he wasn't in the same hunting group as Shao Xuan anymore. Shao Xuan did not remain in the advance group either. Both Mao and Ta did not know Shao Xuan's current strength.

Mao did not believe that Shao Xuan made no progress during this half a year. You could see his progress from the game that he brought back after each hunting trip.

“Ah-Xuan?” Mao looked at Shao Xuan, and was asking about his attitude on this.

In fact, Shao Xuan did not really like this way of battling each other, but he could not refuse it. If he said no on this, or made any excuse to avoid the fight, he would be assumed as a pussy.

When someone challenges you, you accept it. It was an unwritten rule in the tribe.

Since you can't refuse it, then just accept it. Shao Xuan might as well take this opportunity as a chance to see what were his peers were capable of.

Putting down the things he had in his hands, Shao Xuan told the twins to “Keep an eye on my stuff.”

Since Tai stepped forward, people stepped back to make room for him.

Shao Xuan entered the fighting circle, staring at the young warrior of his

height.

Tai's eyes looked unfriendly. He took off his cloak and tossed it aside as he stood in the chilly air with a sleeveless animal skin top. Perhaps he was showing the difference between the physiques of totem warriors and normal kids, or perhaps he was taking the cloak off, in order to move more conveniently. Or, was he maybe trying to show off his totem patterns during the fight?

It was indeed a hobby of the warriors to show off the totem patterns on their arms.

Tai moved his arms around, as well as his wrists, creating cracking sounds. With a loud roar, he stimulated the totem power inside his body, and the totem patterns, which especially belonged to totem warriors, quickly extended from his face to the neck. The totem patterns on his arms were also obvious. The flame-like totem patterns extended from his shoulders to the upper arms for about five to six centimeters.

Seeing the totem patterns on Tai's body, many non-awakened kids looked very jealous. Every time when warriors were comparing the totem patterns on their arms, they could only watch them from aside.

Among the peers that awakened at the same time, Tai made fast progress. Since he was always someone high-profile, people knew his strength quite well already.

Then, the crowd moved their vision to the other side of the circle. People realized that they knew little about Shao Xuan, who was from the orphan cave in the mountain foot area.

Unlike Tai's high profile, Shao Xuan just stood there in silence, like a log.

---



# Chapter 108 - One Year

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

The situation looked a little weird.

If the crowd hadn't known that these two were about to have a combat, they would think that this Shao Xuan was probably asleep!

Snowflakes kept falling down from the sky, with a chilly wind blowing heavily. Some non-awakened kids clenched on their animal skin clothes, but their eyes were still fixed on Shao Xuan and Tai.

Tai had been waiting for some time, but still, he did not see Shao Xuan make any reaction. He wondered what Shao Xuan was doing... Was he determined to have a real fight, or was he just fooling people around? Thinking about that, Tai began to somehow get annoyed.

Lei and the others were also very confused.

Was he not taking the combat seriously? Or was he not fully soaked into the mood?

No, that's not the case!

In Lei's eyes, a sharp light flashed.

The breath!

When in a hunting mission, warriors were accustomed to concealing their breath to keep themselves hidden.

Before a hunter attacks, he would never let the prey notice his presence. So, warriors would hide their breath when waiting, while many old experienced warriors had already formed their own habits of holding back their breath. Normally they would move and walk in silence.

Compared to old experienced warriors, most young totem warriors had no such habits formed. Of course, that kind of habit could not be formed overnight.

It didn't require a deliberate preparation, but was just a habit that had been developed naturally after repeated hunting missions.

Inadvertently, they had already entered the best state!

In the past, when the seniors in Lei's family were practicing with Lei, they were in similar states. They didn't seem to be on the warpath at all, and no totem pattern were revealed either. On the appearance, they were a little off, but once they attacked, they struck a fatal move that could finish the enemy immediately.

However, that was the habit of the most experienced warriors. How long had the kid standing in front of him been hunting? He had only awakened for a year! Let alone that he was two years younger than Lei!

Thinking about that, Lei's eyebrows twitched constantly. He opened his eyes wide, staring at Shao Xuan. He wanted to know what he was going to do next, and he would love to see whether his guess was correct.

"I'm ready." Shao Xuan said a simple sentence, while standing there still, like a piece of log.

Tai was already a little annoyed earlier, seeing Shao Xuan's behavior like that. He was about to say something, but before he could do that, he was surprised to hear Shao Xuan say that. However, since Shao Xuan had said that, he did not

need take anything else into account. It was just that he was somehow feeling uneasy. He did not know why, but he felt uneasy.

As for Shao Xuan, Tai's knowledge of him was only limited to the inside discussion that people had in the tribe. For example, he knew that Shao Xuan had found the ancestors, had been allowed in the advance group, and had adopted a spiritless wolf as well as a lousy bird. Some people said that Shao Xuan was the most outstanding warrior among his peers, towards which, Tai had always had his suspicions.

How strong could someone at his own age be? They had awakened in the same year, but Shao Xuan was from the orphan cave down in the mountain foot area! Also, he had no legendary tales about beating anyone.

“Fine!”

Tai stepped hard on the ground as he rushed towards Shao Xuan. Together with every step he made, the layer of snow on the ground would fly up. There were ‘boom’ sounds as he stepped on the ground very hard. In the meantime, a fierce atmosphere quickly spread out, and people all around could feel the suppression brought by Tai at that moment. It was obvious that Tai had an astonishing explosive power.

People looked at Shao Xuan, but he was still standing there in silence like a log. He showed no gesture of defense, nor were his totem patterns revealed.

Was he stunned?

People couldn't help but wonder thus.

Not only the others, even Tai, who was punching his fist towards Shao Xuan, had started to feel confused. However, he was already in the middle of the movement, there's no way that he would ever stop it without any reason. Who cares what he was thinking.. He shall be schooled first!

Bang!

Tai's fist hit on some flesh.

What the fuck?!

All emotions in Tai's heart changed to astonishment.

How's that even possible?!

Everyone there was thinking the same thing.

Tai was so surprised, that he just stood there still, as if he'd just been struck by lightning. All his hairs stood up. It was clearly a chilly cold snowy day, but Tai was sweating on his back.

Staring at the palm that blocked his fist, Tai was totally lost. It looked like a normal palm, similar in size with his own palm, yet it stopped his fist from going any further.

He looked up along the palm that blocked his fist, but he could not see to what extent his opponent's totem patterns spread, for both his arms were covered in animal skin sleeves. Then, he saw a face with clear totem patterns.

One moment earlier, the totem patterns were nowhere to be found, but now...

Shao Xuan's totem patterns had not slowly spread out like Tai. The totem patterns on Shao Xuan's face seemed to have appeared at once, just at that

moment.

As was known to all, the totem patterns should appear from one's top to the bottom. While the speed of the appearance was a reflection on how well the person mastered his totem power. The more control that the person had on his totem power, the more quickly would his totem patterns show from nothing. In fact, Shao Xuan's totem patterns seemed to appear out of nowhere, without any notice. In the blink of an eye, the patterns appeared.

How well had this boy mastered his totem power? People dared not to ponder too much about it.

Tai looked into Shao Xuan's eyes, and the moment they made eye contact, Tai felt a chill over his spine. Shao Xuan's eyes were exuding a fierce atmosphere, and Tai felt as if he was confronting some ferocious beast with its fangs showing, who was about to bite his arms off the next moment.

Withdraw! That was Tai's only thought now.

Tai stepped against the ground, as he planned to go backwards. However, soon enough, he realized the fact that he could not step back at all! The palm that blocked his fist earlier had been clenched and held his fist tightly.

Lei closed his eyes as he was standing on the side, watching the combat.

One move elaborated everything.

There was no need in continuing this funny show.

He could not know that someone in the tribe had already reached that level!

It was still a fresh memory to him, that his great grandpa once said to him, "You need to look further, and do not get trapped by those around you." He had paid no attention to that reminder until now. Aside from people living in the upper half of the mountain, who else would deserve his attention? Now it seemed that he made a huge mistake, and he was after all, a short-sighted man.

When he opened his eyes again, Lei managed to control his astonishment on his face.

"You lost, Ah-Tai." Lei said calmly.

Lost? Ah-Tai came back to himself as he was thinking about how to step back. Yes, he lost.

Tai felt a release on his fist, and his arm regained freedom, although one moment ago it was tightly controlled by his opponent.

"I lost." Said Tai.

Looking at the person in front of him again, Tai noticed that one moment earlier, Shao Xuan's face was covered with clear totem patterns, but now, they had all disappeared, as if they had never appeared.

"Your fist is meant for the ferocious beasts, then your target should be the ferocious beasts." Said Shao Xuan.

"That's correct." Lei thought about it and said, "It's indeed boring if we only combat within the tribe...I understand what you are implying."

Shao Xuan looked at Lei...What do you think you know? He sensed that there was something wrong...

Lei himself thought that he fully understood Shao Xuan's point, and he continued, "Just like when every time we get back from a hunting trip, we walk along the Path of Glory. The best way to show our abilities is by competing with each other by the game we hunted!"

The others all acted like "That is true".

Even Tai, who was pretty upset earlier, regained his spirited, “Okay! Then we compete by the game!”

“Me too!” said Lei.

Anything could happen during a hunting mission. It was not like the most kick-ass fighter could put down the most game. Many other factors were crucial in hunting. With a year’s adjustment and adoption to the hunting missions, the young totem warriors would turn into experienced ones in the second year. They did not need to step back.

“I want in, too.” Mao said.

With Lei and Mao’s leading effect, the other young warriors shouted out and tried to participate in this competition.

Shao Xuan stood beside, totally lost... I was not fucking implying any of that shit!

Originally, Shao Xuan wanted to say, that when you have the energy and strength to fight useless fights with people in the tribe, you may just as well go back and practice more, so that next year when going out with the hunting team, you could apply all your killing moves on the prey.

Due to the fact that stoneware was not durable, everyone in the tribe cherished their fine stoneware. So normally, when they started a fight or spar, they would not take out their good stoneware as tools or weapons. Most of the times, people would fight each other with their bare hands. As for wooden sticks...well, they were only meant for those who were not awakened.

That kind of combat should only be used to communicate friendship, and for normal practice. It was totally unnecessary if people wanted to distinguish a clear winner. That was only Shao Xuan’s thought, for totem warriors had a different temperament when they were holding hunting tools and when they didn’t.

However, Shao Xuan did not expect his words to be misinterpreted like that. Those folks were all so excited. Seeing their red faces, Shao Xuan assumed that even ten ferocious beasts couldn’t pull their thoughts back.

“Since we compete with each other by the game...then, do we compete by quality, or do we compete by quantity?” Someone asked.

Mao and Lei turned to Shao Xuan at the same time.

“Ah-Xuan, what do you think? You are the one who proposed it.” Mao asked.

I proposed nothing!

Shao Xuan lifted his hand to rub his forehead. If he could, he would love to swallow back what he said before, and replace it with some more plain words. He himself was the one to blame for triggering so much trouble.

However, if you think about it, you'll find that it was not a bad idea. It was better for them to try to put down more prey, than to start more in-fights within the tribe. After a whole year's hunting, young warriors were much more mature regarding their minds and temper. They were fully aware that they couldn't be impulsive in the hunting field, and hence, they would control themselves. Under such circumstances, it was a good thing for them to fight for more and stronger game.

It can't be over a short term, in case that anyone would be too eager to prove themselves. Moreover, they belonged to different hunting teams. And the two hunting teams took hunting missions in turns. The environment also could affect the results.

“One year. Next winter, we take out our harvest and have the contest.” Shao Xuan said.

Mao and Lei both agreed that it was a good idea, “Okay, then one year it is.”

There were too many people shouting to join the hunting contest, so Lei said, “Perhaps we should write down all the names of those that want to participate.”

“I have an animal skin!” A young warrior took out a piece of animal skin.

“Then what about the pen? Does anyone have a pen? And pigment?” Mao looked at the crowd behind him.



“Use mine.” Shao Xuan took out a carbonated pen that he made himself, and passed it along.

“What’s this? It can write?” Someone asked.

Many people were seeing Shao Xuan’s carbonated pen for the first time. But Mao had spent some time with Shao Xuan when they were in the same hunting group, so he knew how to use it.

Mao took the carbonated pen, and wrote down his name on the animal skin, before he passed it back to Shao Xuan.

When Shao Xuan finished writing his name on the animal skin, the carbonated pen got snatched away by Lei. He grabbed the pen as if it was a stone knife, and wrote down his name.

After that, the other warriors all rushed to put their names on the list.

In the end, every totem warrior there, including Mo-Er and Ku, had put their names on the animal skin roll, and officially took part in this one-year competition. Many people like Mo-Er had absolutely no interest in fighting one another, but when it comes to competing by hunting, they were quite interested.

The twins, and some other kids that had potential to be awakened after this winter, were itching for a try, but all they could do was itch. Mao and Lei would never allow them to be part of the competition. Newly awakened warriors all needed some time to adjust to the change, and people did not wish them to be anxious for success, and hence to break the rules they had in the hunting team. For example, Ah-Fei, he was so careless that he almost caused severe consequences.

So, this bunch of “fat dumplings” could only clench on their thick animal skin clothes, and stare at each other, pouting.

---

# Chapter 109 - Qualifications to Attend the Ritual

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

Because of the agreement they made for the next year, and because of those young warriors signing their names on the animal skin, people did not pay any extra attention for that earlier combat.

Fighting for territories was something childish, and it was only a combat between kids. However, this animal skin roll with all the young warriors' names on it was clearly a written letter of challenge. It was a challenge among totem warriors!

Without saying, everyone knew which was more important and more appealing.

With all the time spent on the mountainside, it was already later than usual when Shao Xuan finally returned home in the mountain foot area.

"Were you busy with things in the medicine house today? Or was there anything wrong with the Shaman?" Seeing that Shao Xuan arrived home later,

Old Ke asked him quite nervously.

“Nothing happened. The tasks in the medicine house were not many. I left early, but met some people around the mountain side. We communicated a little for a while.” Said Shao Xuan.

Old Ke got quite relieved at his answer. He even said favorably, “It’s better for you if you communicate more with people up in the mountain.”

“Yes, I understand.”

After eating something, Shao Xuan went back to his own room, pulled up his sleeves, and then slowly stimulated the totem power within his body.

Unlike during the training place, this time, Shao Xuan tried to control his totem power slowly, so the totem patterns appeared gradually on his arms. The flame-like patterns started from his shoulders, and wandered along his arms.

They passed the one-third point of his upper arms, and then reached to the half point, and then, two-thirds of the length... The totem patterns finally stopped at two-thirds of his upper arms!

When he was in the last hunting mission this year, Shao Xuan remembered that his totem patterns only reached the half point. In fact, after the end of the hunting season, Shao Xuan did not spend much time on training in the training ground, before he started learning herblore from the Shaman. Besides the drawing of the Shaman Volumes...

The drawing of the Shaman Volumes?

The power of inheritance!

Shao Xuan felt the totem in his mind. The two horns were wrapped with red flames, and at the bottom of the flames around the two horns, the blue flames appeared, clearer than before. Compared with the time when he started learning about drawing the Shaman Volumes, there were more blue flames. However, the red flames did not reduce in quantity either, instead, they grew even bigger!

Now, he was not in a state of battle, so the flame itself indicated that it was in its normal height.

In the past, Shao Xuan hadn't noticed the change, and he would only focus on the blue flames that represented the power of inheritance when he was drawing the Shaman Volumes. Now it seemed that the blue flames had enlarged the whole flame around the totem.

So it was beneficial to practice the power of inheritance?! That was totally beyond Shao Xuan's expectation.

No wonder that Shao Xuan felt that he could use his totem power more skillfully than during his last hunting mission. He did not expect to defeat Tai with only a single move. He thought perhaps it would take awhile for them to distinguish the winner. But, at the very moment that Tai showed his totem patterns, Shao Xuan suddenly felt that this person in front of him was not that strong. He could handle him. He could handle him easily.

Shao Xuan had no idea whether other warriors whose totem patterns reached the two-third point of the upper arms would feel the same. He carefully recalled the scene at that time, and tried to experience the change of his totem patterns slowly. Then, he shook his shoulders, taking out the box with the animal skin roll, brush pen, and pigment, and started to make a Shaman Volume.

Meanwhile, those people up in the mountain gradually came back to senses after Shao Xuan had left. Tai even said in regret, "I forgot to ask him about the length of his totem patterns!"

Lei stared at the spot where Shao Xuan was standing at, and noticed that there was a pair of footprints dented in the ground. That was created when Shao Xuan was confronting Tai, but people did not notice it before.

"Why should you care about the length of his totem patterns? All you need to do is to defeat him before the end of next winter." Said Lei.

"Yes, indeed." Tai rubbed his fist while agreeing.

While the other young warriors were thinking and discussing about what kind of game, and how much game they planned to hunt for next year, Shao Xuan maintained his old pattern of life. In the mornings, he would go painting in the Shaman's place, and then help Gui Ze out in the medicine house in the afternoons. After that, he would go back home, stay in his own room, and slowly paint his own things on pieces of animal skin.

The winter was passing day by day.

Shao Xuan had visited the orphan cave once. Some kids were sleeping, but older kids had the energy to carry stones to practice their strength. It was obviously a terrific change. Now, kids in the cave were in no lack of food. Aside from the fish they stored before winter, they would constantly receive gifts from Chacha. Every time when Chacha caught some little things that he did not care to eat, he would toss them down at the gate of the orphan cave.

Everything was improving.

Shao Xuan stretched himself, looking at the almost-finished painting on the stone desk in front of him.

Now, it was not that hard for him to finish a picture. At first, he would need half a day's rest after finishing one painting. But now, he was totally able of painting a few pictures in half a day. After that, he could still go out to train Caesar and Chacha.

The Shaman gave him two pieces of animal skin. Shao Xuan would take one up to the mountaintop, to copy other Shaman Volumes or paint his own paintings, and then present his work to the Shaman for examination. While as for the other one... Shao Xuan kept it at home to practice, and the Shaman had no idea of that.

In the Shaman's eyes, it was already very hard-working of Shao Xuan to have painted that much every day, which had long exceeded his expectations. The Shaman would never have guessed that every day when Shao Xuan returned home, he would continue painting on another animal skin roll. Let alone that he was not copying, he was making original work based on his own consciousness!

Shao Xuan planned to present his work as a gift to the Shaman later. The Shaman spared no effort in teaching him knowledge about herbs, and how to control his power of inheritance. Shao Xuan wanted to repay this kind old shaman as well.

For the sake of the tribe, the Shaman must stay put in the tribe. It was a big sacrifice, not being able to go out. Of course, the Shaman had his responsibilities.

However, one's poison might be another's honey. Shao Xuan found the position hard to adjust, but perhaps the Shaman thought differently. He might just be a little regretful, for not being able to step out from the tribe. Shao Xuan could see it every time when he looked into the Shaman's eyes.

"Almost done..." Shao Xuan whispered to himself as he stared at the animal skin roll in front of him.

Before the winter came to an end, people in the tribe were busy selecting qualified kids that had reached a certain age, to prepare for the coming ceremony. The Shaman was quite busy these days, and he did not have time to check on Shao Xuan's work lately.

This day, when the Shaman finally had some spare time to sit there with closed eyes, resting, he suddenly thought of something, and looked at the animal skin roll on his desk. It was dropped in here by Shao Xuan when he finished this morning's practice. He was in the middle of something else, hence he just left it there without opening it.

Taking the animal skin roll in his hands, the Shaman noticed something different. It was not the same animal skin roll that Shao Xuan used for practice normally. Perhaps, these past few days, that lad had finished a whole roll of painting?

Filled with curiosity in his heart, the Shaman unfolded the animal skin roll. As he untied the leather rope on the cover, the Shaman recalled that every time in the past when he was checking on Shao Xuan's work, he would silently sigh in his heart, for such a talented young man wouldn't want to be the next shaman. Indeed, once one got out with the other warriors, he or she might never be satisfied with settling down. It was better for him to cultivate someone from

youth.

He unfolded the animal skin roll.

Originally, the Shaman assumed that Shao Xuan would paint something simple, for example, plants such as the jumping fruits, or other few kinds of medical plants. However, he did not expect that...

His hands were trembling hard.

The first painting on the Shaman Volume was a little long. If others saw it, they would never have guessed what it's content was. However, the Shaman was the shaman. He saw giant vines twining around ancient trees, and thick fogs slowly rise from the ground, there were lakes and pools hiding behind the woods. One could faintly feel the vitality and risk, which caused trembling hairs and tense nerves... That was a painting filled with the breath of the forest!

The Shaman raised his hand on his chest. He was only seeing the first painting, but his heart was beating fast.

Many shamans were raised as a shaman since childhood. Once they were chosen, they would never be allowed to step out of the tribe. So, since very young, the Shaman had never left the tribe's territory.

Although he was aware of many things, for example the names of the ferocious beasts that hunting teams might encounter, and where it was that the advance group was heading to each time. He only knew them in his mind, instead of seeing the real scene with his own eyes. Even when they saw those beasts, they would already be dead and butchered when they were presented to the Shaman.

Perhaps, in his youth, the Shaman might have wondered what it was like in the wild, and perhaps he had dreamt about going out of the tribe one day. But as time went by, he had become the shaman, and he had always been the shaman for so many years. All his thoughts toned down, and he turned into a responsible and well-respected Shaman with a lot of responsibilities on his shoulder. He needed to be at the helm and decide the development direction of the tribe.



The Shaman was having a hard time trying to keep his emotions under control, even though he had already been through a lot, and almost nothing could cause him to have such fluctuations in emotions.

One painting after another, there were things happening along the hunting route, as well as things that Shao Xuan encountered when he was in the advance group, including that flight team of giant dragonflies.

The Shaman went back to the beginning to read it again after he had finished the first round.

Someone outside made some boiled water, and he brought in a glass of brewed herbs for the Shaman to drink when he was thirsty.

The person was walking in silence as he came in. Also, he tried not to make any noise to disturb the Shaman when he was placing down the stone cup. When walking out of the door, he glimpsed at the Shaman, thinking that perhaps the Shaman was reading some ancient animal skin roll left by the ancestors. Every time when he read something left by the ancestors, he would become extremely excited or sad.

On the other hand, Shao Xuan had already finished the tasks assigned by the Shaman, so he went to help in the medicine house. When he went down the mountain after a day's work, he found that Old Ke was already circling around his door, seeming pretty anxious about something. When he finished with one circle, he would stamp his cane on the ground.

"What happened?" Asked Shao Xuan.

"Hey, you're back!" Old Ke stepped forward towards Shao Xuan, with his mouth trembling, but in the end, he did not manage to say anything.

"Calm down, please. Just tell me what happened."

"I can't calm down!" Old Ke said with heavy breaths. After a while, he finally got better, and said in a low voice, "Someone sent you a message from the Shaman."

"Okay. What did he say?"

“The Shaman said that you should prepare to attend the ritual ceremony at the end of this winter.”

“Isn’t everybody supposed to attend the ritual ceremony?” Shao Xuan was confused. What’s all the excitement about?

“You are in the core name list! You will be one of those who stands at the edge of the fire pit! Right at the center!” Old Ke stamped with his cane hard on the ground.

Old Ke had never felt more proud than he was feeling now. He felt as if his kid had distinguished himself as outstanding. Although Shao Xuan had his accomplishments in the past, which earned the Shaman’s approval, and he had the chance to learn from the Shaman. However, the ritual ceremony was literally the most sacred thing for people in the tribe. Anyone would spontaneously salute to the mountaintop if he or she would get to participate in any event of the ritual ceremony. Let alone, to be one of those who stands in the inner circle!

However, Shao Xuan was not a local of the tribe after all. Although he tried his best to blend in, he could not alter his own thoughts. He was not as excited as Old Ke.

Old Ke, on the other hand, was pretty pro-active about it. “What should you wear then? Where did you put your outfit made by the skin of the Thorn Black Wind? Where did you put it, Ah-Xuan? Take it out and I’ll help you clean it!”

The outfit made by the skin of the Thorn Black Wind? “I wore it once during the Memorial of the Ancestors. Then I tossed it under bed.”

He was not unsatisfied with it because its weight, the weight was nothing to Shao Xuan, he just felt like he was a little monster while wearing that outfit, there was a row of thorns on the back.

Old Ke took out the outfit of the Thorn Black Wind’s skin for cleaning, and left Shao Xuan standing alone in his room.

One of those standing in the very inner circle around the fire pit? Who were those guys again?

He tried hard to search his memories. Suddenly, his eyelid twitched. What the

fuck! They were those who danced the Ritual Dance!!

The Ritual Dance that contained moves of digging out carrots, shaking boobs, and waving rags like a lousy waitress does!

“...It’s so embarrassing...”

---

# Chapter 110 - The Ritual Dance

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

Not everyone would have the chance to learn the ancient dance, also known as the ritual dance.

By the end of every winter, at the ritual ceremony during the Snow Festival, there would be fifty totem warriors selected to shoulder the responsibilities as ritual dancers next to the fire pit. All fifty of them were elites recognized by the entire tribe.

However, based on Shao Xuan's knowledge, only outstanding young warriors with a few years worth of hunting experience, and those with outstanding contributions to the tribe, could be nominated to the list of ritual dancers. Over hundreds of years, very few would enter the list in their teens. Moreover, Shao Xuan had only awakened a year ago.

It sounded absurd at first.

When Old Ke heard the messenger's words, his first reaction was denial as well. Anyone in the tribe with a normal brain wouldn't believe it. However, the messenger double checked to confirm its authenticity, and said that it was

indeed a decision made by the Shaman. The Shaman asked Shao Xuan to be prepared soon.

No wonder Old Ke became so excited.

The ritual ceremony being an important event in the tribe, the ritual dance wasn't solely about selecting proper dancers. It had to be delivered exactly as instructed by the ancient teachings. Shao Xuan had never learned anything about this so-called ancient teachings in the past. It doesn't seemed to be simple guideline teachings.

Since Shao Xuan knew no one that he could turn to for help with regards to the ritual dance, he could only go up to the mountaintop to ask the Shaman for help. Even Mai and Qiao weren't familiar with the ritual dance, let alone the others that lived lower than them.

Early next morning, Shao Xuan carried the stone box and rushed to the Shaman's place.

By the time he arrived, the Shaman was talking about the upcoming ritual ceremony with the Chief and the two team leaders from the tribe. There were a lot of things that needed to be prepared well in advance.

With the appearance of Shao Xuan, the two team leaders and the Chief looked at him at once, but in a very gentle way. It was out of their expectations that Shao Xuan would be part of the selected fifty. However, that day when the Shaman asked them to have a meeting, he directly indicated that Shao Xuan should be a part of the ritual dance.

They were aware of the one-year deal made by the younger generation, as well as the fact that Shao Xuan defeated Tai with a single move. With regards to ability, Shao Xuan was indeed the brightest one amongst the newly-awakened warriors in the past years. There was no denial of that. He also made a few significant contributions to the tribe during the last year. So, when the Shaman decided that Shao Xuan be one of the fifty, both the team leaders and the Chief did not raise any objections.

In the eyes of the people in the tribe, being one of the fifty was a great honor. However, the two team leaders had more thought in this, since they knew what it meant to be one of the fifty. Every year, they would try their best to

recommend people from their own hunting teams, and the Shaman would finalize the name list.

Aside from these big shots, Shao Xuan also met Tuo inside the stone house as well.

“Ah-Xuan, I appointed Tuo to teach you all the moves of the ritual dance. As for the paintings...” The Shaman had an even deeper smile: “You can stop practicing it for now.”

Chief Ao looked at the Shaman, and then looked at Shao Xuan again. He sensed that there was something that he didn’t know about. But sometimes, the Shaman was just like that. No one could ever predict his actions and thoughts.

“Okay.” Answered Shao Xuan.

Instead of staying in the stone house, Shao Xuan left with Tuo.

Tuo lived near the mountain top, so it didn’t take them too long to reach his place. Also, Tuo was one of the fifty this year.

Warriors from Tuo’s family of his parents’ and grandparents’ generations had performed the ritual dance. So, the ancient dance had been passed along in his family. He did not need to learn the moves from others to be proficient in them. Or else, the Shaman wouldn’t let him teach Shao Xuan.

The truth was, Tuo was more than surprised when the Shaman assigned him to teach Shao Xuan the ritual dance. After all, Shao Xuan was too young, and had only been awakened as a totem warrior for only a year. He shouldn’t have been listed as one of the fifty! Perhaps, it was because that he found the ancestors, Tuo thought.

“I have learned how to perform the ritual dance since I was young. It’s not hard.” Said Tuo, “I’ll dance the full set of moves for you to watch. Here, watch me.”

At the end of his words, Tuo began to dance in the room. In Shao Xuan’s eyes, those moves were still very clownish, without any sense of beauty. They didn’t seem melodious at all, and there was even a move that looked as if the dancer was washing dishes. However, Tuo was very serious when performing the

dance, as if he was doing something that was very grand and solemn. Even it was only a demonstration, he did it with respect and honor.

After a whole demonstration, Tuo taught Shao Xuan one move after another.

“You bend your body, like this...and here, pull back your hands...”



Shao Xuan imitated Tuo's moves as he swung his arms up and down, back and forth. Sometimes he had to shake his arms and thighs, or shake and stamp his feet, to make strong rhythmic sounds. Also, his feet had to move back and forth, sometimes to the left and sometimes to the right. Sometimes his body should lean forward, and then squat down a little, before he jumps up on one foot, and lands down with a horse stance. Then, he needed to wave his arms above his head as if holding a whip, and then constantly look back and forth.

If Shao Xuan saw similar dances during his previous life, he would totally have laughed at it aloud. However now, he had to force himself to learn it, and stay serious when doing all the moves.

Although there were no drums or whistles making the beats, all moves maintained certain rhythm.

It was not all about the moves. Tuo told Shao Xuan that he should use his totem power when performing the ritual dance, as well as to breathe in a certain way. That was all part of the "ancient teachings".

In general, Shao Xuan came to a conclusion, that the ritual dance needed to be accompanied with meditation and specific breathing!

What was the use of this coordination? Tuo said nothing about the effect now, but Shao Xuan could guess that it should be related to the flames or totem.

Shao Xuan had heard from someone that the earliest form of humans showing their feelings was through body movements and dancing gestures. Dance and moves were also a certain language of people expressing their passions and desires.

Here, the ancient dance was a tool they used to communicate with the flame and the totem. So when dancing, people would perceive them.

Thinking about the fact that the ritual dance was used in ritual ceremonies, and how the two team leaders would fight over the fifty spots, perhaps the ritual dance was really for people's cultivation.

Just like what Tuo had said, the moves were quite simple, and could be easily memorized. The most important thing in the whole process was how to do the meditation during the dance, and how to properly breathe in the process without messing up with one's own moves.

When it was almost noon, Shao Xuan had learned and memorized all the moves.

“Not bad. You are learning fast. Just now you made zero mistakes.” Said Tuo.

Shao Xuan moved his arms, and nodded, “I will do more practice when I go back.”

“Yes, indeed. Practice makes perfect. Don't make any mistake during the ritual ceremony.” Tuo stopped smiling and said seriously, “If you are confused about anything or have questions, you know where to find me.” Since the Shaman assigned him to teach Shao Xuan, he had the responsibility to teach him well.

There should be no mistakes during the ritual ceremony!

———

After the last snowflake had fallen down from the sky, and the clouds began to fade, finally, the moons revealed their faces in the sky. After a whole silent winter, the tribe resumed its vitality.

The Shaman had appointed someone to announce the time for this year's ritual ceremony of the Snow Festival to the public.

On the day of the ritual ceremony, Shao Xuan took a good bath. That was something that everyone in the tribe was supposed to do before ritual ceremonies. As for the little whelps in orphan cave down the mountain... they had been properly brushed and washed already yesterday!

Caesar and Chacha stayed in the house today. Chacha was behaving quite well today, and he refused to go anywhere outside, as if he had already sensed something. Chacha went inside the roof since early in the morning. It seemed that beasts and animals always had an instinct that helped them to avoid danger.

“Now, hurry. You should do the ritual dance in this outfit!” Old Ke took out the outfit made from the Thorn Black Wind’s skin that he had already cleaned a few times. He wanted Shao Xuan to be used to this outfit first... He was even more nervous than Shao Xuan.

Shao Xuan’s face twitched once. He took the clothes from Old Ke, and put on the outfit with thorns on the back.

Before, when he heard talks about dancing, mostly it would be referring to those slim and gentle women. Shaking shoulders and butts, with light paces and moves. The dancers were good, and the audience was happy.

However now, Shao Xuan felt that he was baring fangs and brandishing claws in that outfit. He felt so barbaric, like some alien creature invading the Earth. The good thing was that all people in the tribe were dressed like that. They turned into animals today, and it was a grand feast.

Old Ke had painted colorful patterns on his face with plant pigment, but Shao Xuan hadn’t. He needed to go up to the mountaintop in advance, for the Shaman would draw patterns on the fifty people’s faces himself. The pigment would also be different from the normal kind.

“I’ll be heading up first.” Shao Xuan walked out of the door with that Thorn Black Wind outfit.

“Sure, go quickly. I’ll go up with Ge and the others later.” Old Ke waved his hands, indicating that Shao Xuan should leave now, so as not to make the Shaman wait. Shao Xuan was the only one from down the mountain in the fifty. He couldn’t be late, he shouldn’t, or the others would assume people down the mountain had no sense of punctuality.

In front of the Shaman’s stone room, the others had already gathered. Many of them had learned from the team leaders that Shao Xuan was part of it this year. So, when they saw Shao Xuan in person, they were more surprised, but didn’t say anything. Today was a very serious and grand day for them. No one had extra energy to pay attention to other things.

It was already dark when the Shaman finally finished painting colorful patterns on fifty faces.

“Let’s go.” Some middle-aged man in the team said.

With the awakening of his totem power, Shao Xuan grew a lot in the past one year. However, when he found himself in the midst of a bunch of grown adult warriors, he was still very obviously the shortest one in the crowd. Even in animal skin clothes, people knew that the little one was him.

“How is that possible? What’s he doing there?” Someone whispered as people were walking up to the mountaintop.

“Who’s that?”

“It’s Ah-Xuan! I recognize that outfit made from the skin of a Thorn Black Wind.”

Someone wearing an outfit made from Thorn Black Wind at that age, it could only be Shao Xuan.

“Is he really walking in the same crowd? How could he be one of the fifty? How old is he?”

“Can’t you just shut up?! That’s the Shaman’s decision!”

Some were astonished, and some were jealous. People shared different emotions in the crowd.

Lang Ga and the others had already learned the truth from Old Ke. But even now, they still found it unbelievable. Being one of the fifty had always been their dream since childhood. However, now their dreams came true for someone who was way younger than them.

In the circle of timber piles around the fire pit, stone basins contained with fresh fruits and ferocious beasts’ meat were already placed.

Shao Xuan followed the team and stopped by a timber pile. He had reached his spot.

The ritual ceremony was about to start, and there were already a lot of people standing on the mountaintop, while some others were climbing up the mountain. Many people in the crowd were talking about Shao Xuan. Naturally, the youngest person in the fifty, as well as the only one who had become one of the fifty after being awakened for only one year, gained the most attention from people, let alone that such a thing hadn’t happened in the last century!

There were more than eighty kids sent to the mountaintop for awakening, two more than last year. Tuo and Jie Ba from the cave, and the twins of Mai and Qiao were all in the crowd.

It grew completely dark.

Just like in Shao Xuan’s memory, one step after another, the ritual dance went smoothly. When the Shaman finally began to sing the chorus, Shao Xuan clearly felt the reaction of the totem in his mind.

At the same time, the little flame in the center of the fire pit began to grow quickly. One moment earlier, it didn’t seem to be able to light up a timber pile, but now, as if a full bucket of petroleum had been poured in, it grew big in the blink of an eye.

Being totem warriors, naturally they had a stronger perception of the totem. The totem in their minds began to expand its size together with the rising flame in the fire pit.

When the flame filled the whole fire pit, on the top of the flame, there appeared a totem of two horns wrapped in flames.

---

# Chapter 111 - Qualifications to Join

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

Now, the first Flame! The Soaring Flame! The totem appears!

The totem power in his body became active, even without him deliberately stimulating it. Totem patterns appeared on every totem warrior's face.

The blue and white colors in Shao Xuan's mind danced together with the flame.

Perhaps it was his illusion, but Shao Xuan felt that the flame in the fire pit grew higher than last year, and it was also dancing more violently, as if it was trying hard to get out.

Those standing beside the timber piles shouldn't move willfully, so now, Shao Xuan was unable to watch the others' facial expressions. Perhaps, the others were sharing similar thoughts, but he could not sense any abnormal situation from the Shaman's voice. He could only have his suspicions.

At that time, everyone at the scene was already void from other thoughts. All they could see was the totem in the center above the fire pit.

It lit up the surroundings, and the whole mountaintop was covered in a layer



of red.

The Shaman's singing grew more and more sonorous.

Duh! Duh! Duh!

The drums suddenly rang in a specific rhythm, together with the sound of clacking bones and beating rocks, which meant that Shao Xuan and the others had to start dancing.

Together with the Shaman's singing, people by the timber piles began to move around the fire pit.

The ritual dance was passed along many generations since the foundation of the tribe, and Shao Xuan had underestimated it after all.

The moves were of no difficulty at all. Nor was he feeling awkward by "washing dishes", "digging carrots" and "waving rags" in front of so many people. The real situation was that, Shao Xuan finally learnt the essential secrets and wonders contained in the ritual dance, once he soaked himself into the moves. Gradually, he stopped feeling embarrassed at all.

The sounds of fifty people stamping on the ground and waving arms gradually unified into the surrounding percussions.

The rhythm was a little weird at first, but with the rhythm and sound created, together with the ritual dance, it became quite harmonious. The special beats and rhythm rang through the peak, one sound after another.

Shao Xuan had been practicing this ritual dance at home, repeatedly, so he had already memorized every single move. He was well aware of what move came after the other, and when he should deliver them. He did not black-out at all.

When dancing, Shao Xuan paid extra attention to do as the ancient teachings' commanded, as Tuo had said to him. He used the special way of breathing while dancing, so as to feel the connection between him and the totem.

Soon, Shao Xuan had the feeling that he seemed to relate to everything around him.

The totem in the fire pit seemed to have gradually emerged with the totem in

his mind. Shao Xuan was not sure whether the totem in the fire pit influenced the one in his mind, or if it was the other way around. He did not know what the circumstances were with the other warriors, but he decided to carefully experience that change.

If you must distinguish the difference...then the only difference was that the totem in his mind had blue flames at the edges, but the totem in the fire pit had no such blue edges.

The ancient teachings indicated that, one should “try his best to create a connection with the totem in the fire pit”. Shao Xuan thought that he was not connected with the totem in the fire pit completely, so he tried to stimulate his blue flames in his mind, to communicate with the totem in his mind. With the accumulation of blue flames in Shao Xuan’s mind, the whole totem in his mind suddenly grew bigger.

At the same time, the flame in the fire pit suddenly grew higher as it grew towards the sky. The body of the flame almost instantaneously doubled its original size, which scared an old experienced warrior so much, that he almost made a wrong move during the ritual dance. He had never experienced anything similar during the ritual ceremony. Fortunately, he had a silent reaction, he calmed himself down and continued the dance.

All the other things kept moving forward as usual. However, deep down in their hearts, people felt that something was not as usual, seeing the fifty performing the ritual dance.

It was like these people were no longer ritual dancers by the fire pit, waving their arms and legs. They no longer seemed to be dancing in the moment. Instead, they gave out an atmosphere that they were some prepared warriors with stone tools and spears, ready to go hunt at any moment!

Even those experienced ritual dancers sensed that this time was not as any time in the past. They felt as if their blood was boiling, and the excitement didn't easily wear off.

The momentum of the fifty becoming one was full of a strong and fierce power, spreading out some invincible majestic spirit.

If Shao Xuan had to make a metaphor, he would say that even the moves of washing dishes would make people feel magnificent and valiant.

Without anyone noticing, the flame in the fire pit entered the second phase. Balls of flames flew out of the fire pit and drifted towards the surroundings. Since the flame grew a lot, the balls of flames flying out seemed to be bigger than usual.

With the special way of breathing, and the meditation on the perception of totem, Shao Xuan could feel balls of flame flying towards himself.

They touched him, and then he absorbed them.

Inside his body streamed some new energy, and it was brought by those flying balls of flame. They congested together along his meridians.

The totem flame in his mind grew quickly with the absorbed balls of flame.

If we say that others were absorbing energy from the balls of flame like thin streams coming together, then people dancing by the fire pit would be collecting energy like rivers flowing into the ocean. Perhaps that was the merit of being one of the ritual dancers, Shao Xuan thought.

When Mai and the others were talking, Shao Xuan had heard them saying that the situation of the flame in one's mind was closely related to one's speed of progress. As such, it was predictable how beneficial it would be to have the privilege to stay beside the fire pit during the ritual ceremonies. No wonder that both team leaders would try their best to strive for the opportunity to arrange more warriors from their hunting team to be one of the fifty. But no matter what, there were only fifty spots.

The ritual ceremony was continuing, and Shao Xuan was not allowed to be distracted.

By the end of the third flame, the ceremony was coming to an end.

Shao Xuan had no idea to what extent the third flame went, but a loud shout of "Great blessings" from the Shaman aroused everyone at the mountaintop.

The awakening ceremony of the eighty kids was also completed.

Shao Xuan stopped moving and looked around, finding that every kid here had totem patterns on their faces. With a closer look, he confirmed that no one was left out.

In the past, there would be a few that failed to be awakened among every batch of kids. They would have to wait for another year. However, this year, all kids were awakened.

Not only Shao Xuan, even the Shaman had not expected such circumstances. Four of them were speculated not to be awakened this year when they were brought to the Shaman's place. However, to everyone's surprise, they had still awakened after all!

The Shaman stared at Shao Xuan's back as he was leaving, and then looked down at the ground. He heard the Chief Ao talking about his idea about the ritual ceremony, and then decided to prepare for other things accordingly.

The ritual ceremony ended. People decided to go back down the mountain to celebrate after that. The Shaman had claimed the next year to be full of "Great Blessings".

Shao Xuan intended to go down the mountain together with Old Ke after he spoke to Tuo and Jie Ba about something.

Turning around, Shao Xuan encountered Mai and Qiao, who had just spoken to their twins.

“Hey, Ah-Xuan, the thing about Caesar. You have about twenty days.” Mai said, “But since you are now one of the fifty, Caesar’s thing might be easier to handle, given the current circumstances.”

Last year, Ta’s hunting team was the first to go out hunting. Since the tribe had a policy of the two hunting teams taking turns to go out, this year, Gui He would lead his hunting team for this year’s first mission, and Ta’s hunting team would go on the second mission. So, after the ritual ceremony, Shao Xuan still had about twenty days to convince the others in his hunting group. He also had to inform Ta about it, for Ta was the one who finalized the name list in the different hunting groups under his command.

Well, the Shaman was also supposed to know about it.

Shao Xuan intended to take Caesar on a hunting mission this year. He had spent nearly one year in the hunting group, and had done assessments about risks and potential gains if he brought Caesar on board. Of course, they were only in theory, and anything could happen in the real forest. No one could ever guarantee anything, and it was always better to be more careful.

So, Shao Xuan made a safe plan. If Caesar did not behave well after he was taken out in the wild, he would stay in the first location with Caesar, in order to not be the others’ burden later.

In the following days, Shao Xuan took Caesar to the Shaman’s place to share his thoughts with the Shaman. The result was just the same as Shao Xuan predicted, the Shaman did not reject his proposal. Instead, the Shaman was quite looking forward to it. He gave a special pardon to Shao Xuan that he could stay in the first location with Caesar if there was anything wrong.

Since the Shaman was positive about the proposal, Ta did not say anything about it. Moreover, in private, he was a little excited about Shao Xuan’s theory that “A good hound might be the eyes and ears of the huntsmen”. He wanted to see how Caesar would behave himself, and whether the wolf could turn out

to be a surprise, even though he had been kept in the tribe since childhood by Shao Xuan and was tame.

After setting up things with the Shaman and Ta, Shao Xuan asked all the others in Mai's hunting group to gather together at the training ground, so that they could see Caesar during his training, and thus learn about Caesar's behavior.

The others were thinking that they wouldn't reject Shao Xuan's proposal anyway, since the Shaman, the team leader, and Mai all agreed in the first place. Plus, Shao Xuan was one of the fifty during this year's ritual ceremony. That was not someone that they wanted to displease.

After watching Caesar in the training, some of them were talking about getting their own wolf cub in the future. Anyway, wolf packs in the forests constantly fight against each other, and the pack that lost the fight would hardly have any members surviving. They had encountered a few fights themselves, and it shouldn't be too hard to steal a cub or two during the mess.

After handling things with the hunting group, Shao Xuan began to prepare for the coming hunting mission. All the stone tools had been prepared during winter time, so now he did not need to spend more time on stone crafting. The training for Caesar went on day by day, and Shao Xuan had changed some of the traps to see his reactions.

Caesar was very smart. Aside from those that were too complicated, Caesar could manage most of the skills and tasks that Shao Xuan taught or assigned him.

"Have you ever thought about what would be Chacha's future?" Asked Old Ke.

"Chacha is not as gentle as Caesar, and who knows whether he has already flown outside the tribe's territory without us even knowing about it?" Said Shao Xuan. He once found some grass residue on Chacha's beak which did not belong to any plants in the tribe. It only existed in the forest where they went hunting.

At that time, Shao Xuan rebuked him harshly, and so he behaved quite well in the following few days. However now, he was probably turning back to his nature. Chacha had grown a lot in size, and perhaps Shao Xuan's arm won't be

secure enough for him to land on after half a year. According to the Shaman, the naughty bird was still in his youth. It had so much curiosity, that no one would ever manage to control him. He could just fly up to the sky. Who could compare with that?

Now, Chacha had already gone to the riverside to play. Sometimes he would suddenly fly over the river in a pretty fast speed, and catch some fish swimming in the upper layer of water. He would just rip the fish into pieces, and then toss it back into the water, to watch the piranhas fight over the flesh.

That bird was not easy to tame. No one knew how long it would take to tame it into the level that could be brought out into the wild like Caesar.

After twenty days, though Gui He's hunting team hadn't returned, Ta already completed the name list of the second hunting mission, and announced it.

Seeing Caesar following Shao Xuan up to the mountaintop, Old Ke suddenly felt that he was a little reluctant. How time flew, within the blink of an eye, the little fussy cub brought back by Lang Ga had turned into a handsome young wolf.

---



# Chapter 112 - The Rat Wood

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

From the mountaintop until they finally stepped out of the region of the tribe, Caesar received much attention.

When they were walking down along the Path of Glory, people on both sides almost all fixed their attention on Caesar.

Why was the wolf accompanying the hunting team?

Were they out of their damn mind?!

Such an abnormal thing would totally keep people talking about it for a long time in the tribe.

During Shao Xuan's first hunting mission, Lang Ga told him that his only task would be to "keep up". He would not need to do anything else, except for keeping up with the team. Hence, now, the first challenge that Caesar faced was also the same, to keep up.

When people in the tribe first went into the wild for hunting, they would depend on their trainings and guidances from their predecessors. However, when Caesar stepped into the wild, he would more rely on his animal instinct.

According to that instinct, Caesar did not fear or flinch, facing all unfamiliar surroundings. Instead, he became more and more excited.

Even though he had been “locked up” in the tribe for almost two years, for he grew up in the tribe, his wild nature got aroused, more or less, when he entered the forest. In the wild, Caesar was running like a gust of wind. If it weren’t for the hunting team’s rules, he would totally howl or something.

At first, Caesar was very curious about the surroundings, and kept sniffing around. However, after he had been warned by Shao Xuan a few times, he began to keep his curiosity under control. Under the command of his instinct, he closely followed the hunting team, and did not drag the group.

Sometimes, people in the hunting group were travelling on the tree branches. Caesar couldn’t get on the trees, so he ran down on the ground beneath all the branches. When in bright places, he would subconsciously slow down a little bit, but in the darker places, he sped up in running. Those were some natural instincts hiding in Caesar’s blood. While he was in the tribe, the nature didn’t come out, but it became quite obvious when he entered the wild.

Seeing that Caesar was not left behind, nor was he acting abnormally, people in the hunting group became much relieved. In the middle of their journey, Caesar even managed to lure away a big wild beast from the hunting group, and then easily headed back when he ditched it.

After traveling over a mountain, they reached the first location. They would go hunting early in the morning after a night’s rest.

When heading down the mountain, Lang Ga said to Shao Xuan, “You keep an eye on Caesar, Ah-Xuan. There are a lot of traps in this neighborhood. Watch out, so he doesn’t step into one...”

Before he could finish the sentence, Lang Ga saw Caesar walking into the area of numerous traps, sniffing around. He seemed to be wandering around, but he successfully avoided all the traps.

People in the hunting group slowed down a little to watch him.

In fact, there were very few ferocious beasts around the mountaintop. Setting traps here was mainly to defend themselves. If any big beasts or ferocious

beasts chased after them till here, they could use the traps to fight back.

However now, Caesar was taking a walk in there, without a single sound of traps being triggered.

Was that a coincidence?

It shouldn't be. Caesar was walking in a field of traps, and they were nothing to joke about at all. However, up to now, no trap was triggered.

People looked at Lang Ga instead. Lang Ga blushed, and his eyebrows twitched a little as well. Obviously, the current situation was far beyond his expectations.

“I’ve taught him something about identifying traps, and we had done many practices in that field.” Shao Xuan said calmly. He had long predicted that those traps wouldn’t be threatening to Caesar. While they were in the tribe, training on how to avoid traps was a compulsory course to Caesar, every single day.

“So...it...it can avoid traps?” Lang Ga swallowed, for he found the truth hard to accept.

If even animals could learn how to avoid traps, then what’s the meaning of setting traps? To entertain people?

“I will alter and upgrade all the traps in the afternoon when we get back!” Lang Ga said seriously. He did not pay much attention on those traps in that area, for there was a low chance that they would be used during the whole year. Every time when they came to the first location, all he would do was to check on the traps to make sure they were still effective, and to check whether there were little animals who had stepped into them by accident.

Mai found Lang Ga’s reaction very interesting, “Fine, animals know it’s important to learn things. You need to be more careful about the skill you got, Lang Ga.”

When heading down the mountain, Caesar didn’t wander away from Shao Xuan to go on his own little trips. Instead, he kept close with Shao Xuan, guarding against the surroundings.

Last year, three thorn black winds had been wiped off from this mountain, but other ferocious beasts would have entered this place and set their homes. So, they couldn’t be too careful.

“There’s a hole, Mai!” Ang, who was in charge of the vanguard, whispered.

All the others were thrilled by Ang’s report.

“Where is it?!” After confirming that there was no ferocious beast around, the crowd quickly gathered around Ang.

Shao Xuan approached as well with Caesar. He saw Ang push aside some knee-deep grass, and then reveal a middle-sized hole on the ground.

“They came out!” Ang said with excitement.

The “they” that Ang was referring to was some green rodent. Hunting warriors called it the “grass rat”, for they looked like a ball of green grass. Their fur was in the color of green, and it was quite thick, just like grass. When they stayed still in the grass, they would be very difficult for the warriors to spot. Both in the day and at night, they would come out for food and mating.

The reason why people in the hunting group were so excited was that in such seasons, a special plant would grow on the bodies of grass rats – the rat wood.

The rat wood was a kind of parasitic plant, and its parasitic phase was in its premature stage. The seeds of rat wood looked quite similar to some nuts that the grass rats loved to eat. Every year before winter came, grass rats would travel a lot to almost everywhere in the mountain to collect food, and then store the food in their holes that could be meters deep. When they had plenty of food and other supply, they would hide in their holes for the whole winter, eating and shitting.

However, the basin down here had a different climate from the climate on the other side of the mountain. No snow would fall, and the temperature was not that low. Even so, the grass rats living in this area retained their habit of hibernation.

When it was almost wintertime on the other side of the mountain, the grass rats in the basin would start storing food and go back to their holes to prepare for winter. In the whole cold season, they would spend most of their time sleeping. In the gaps of sleeping, they would go to their “basement” for food, and then fall asleep again.

The seeds of rat wood would start sprouting after they were eaten by grass rats. Some days later, they would burgeon out from the skin of grass rats, and grow into some little plants that looked similar with their fur. All the energy that rat wood needed would be from the grass rats themselves. Since they lived

underground, there was no sunshine.

After a whole winter's growth, when the season ended, grass rats would come out from their holes again, and the rat wood seedlings would be strong enough to start their own journey. When it was ready, the seedling would dislocate from the grass rat, and begin to lignify and grow. That would usually happen within fifty days after the winter ended.

Shao Xuan had seen the rat wood in the forest, and they were large. It was hard to imagine that all those great trees started their life journey on the skin of grass rats.

Rat wood, before lignifying, was very beneficial if people ate it. Kids who ate the seedlings of rat wood would have a much stronger physique, and would be awakened at an earlier time. Of course, quantity also mattered in such a situation. The more you ate, the more effective it would be. Even if they didn't awaken earlier, it could help build one's physique.

Many warriors in their hunting group had non-awakened kids back at home. For them, their kids awakening earlier meant one more warrior in the family who could participate in hunting missions one year earlier. There would be more food as well. In the meantime, for those who had already been awakened, the seedlings of rat wood could help with detoxification. It was even more effective than the mixed herbs that they used normally.

People up in the mountain side or mountaintop surely did not care for that plant, but for people living down in the mountain foot area, the rat wood's seedling could be very appealing.

The difficult thing was that grass rats were tough to catch. They were too good at concealments, and once they left their holes, they would be nowhere to find. Also, one hole might have more than one entrance. If you guarded by one entrance, it might just as well exit through another entrance, unless you blocked all the entrances of the cave. The second thing was that, timing was crucial. If the seedling of rat wood dislocated from the grass rat, then it would be of no use.

Mai took a close look at the entrance, and said calmly, "Judging from the soil, it should have already been half a day since they came out."

Hearing that it had already been half a day, people immediately became less excited. How could anyone find them when they had been wandering around for half a day?

"Can Caesar help us find them?" Ang glimpsed at Caesar and asked Shao

Xuan.

“We can give it a shot.” Said Shao Xuan.

At his words, the crowd became excited again.

“Can it really help?”

“How would it do that? The wolf has never seen a grass rat!”

“Okay, okay, we just let Caesar try it first.” Mai stopped the others from asking all those questions. The two kids in his family had already been awakened, so he did not need the seedlings for his kids anymore. However, due to its detoxication effect, it was worth trying to find them.

Under Shao Xuan’s command, Caesar went to the entrance of the hole to sniff, and then walked around the hole. He seemed to have confirmed something. Although Caesar had never seen a grass rat in his life, he identified its smell around the hole.

Caesar walked towards a direction, and then looked back at Shao Xuan.

“They should be over there, uncle Mai.” Said Shao Xuan.

“Follow!”

People followed Caesar’s pace. They were not fast, and sometimes when there were ferocious beasts lingering around, Caesar would give a warning.

Caesar seemed to be quite excited while tracking. With him speeding up, Shao Xuan knew that they were getting close to the grass rats.

Whoosh!



Caesar shot out like an arrow, and jumped high to leap over a row of bushes, and drilled into a pile of grass that was even higher than a human.

“Caesar!” Shao Xuan was a little worried. He was afraid that Caesar might have become too excited, so that he might ignore some dangers hiding behind the grass.

The grass was dense, and no one could see what was hiding inside, or know what was happening inside. After Caesar rushed into it, there was a hasty rustling.

“Squeak!”

Soon enough, Caesar jumped out from the bushes again.

Seeing Caesar, people’s tense muscles loosened up a little bit. But quickly, their focus was on the green fuzzy ball that Caesar was carrying in his mouth.

“It’s a grass rat!”

“Quick, quick! Ah-Xuan, check the grass rat, see if there’s still a rat wood on its body!”

All the warriors were very excited.

Caesar held the grass rat between his lips, but he did not kill it or even wound it.

Shao Xuan took over the grass rat from Caesar’s mouth. If it weren’t for the green fur, the grass rat would only be the size of two fists. However, with the green fur, it grew three times bigger than its original size.

Weighing the grass rat in his hands, Shao Xuan could feel that it was a bony one. Perhaps it was only that skinny because of the rat wood’s parasitism.

He did not see any bald spots on its body. After a careful search, Shao Xuan laid his eyes on a special “fur” that was a little thicker than the others. He put his stone knife back on his waist, and grabbed the “fur” with his bare hands to check near the root of the green “fur”. There was a thin lignified circle. Shao Xuan was positive, “It’s still there!”

He passed the grass rat to another warrior besides him, so that the other warrior could cut down that fur-liked green seedling of rat wood, and then he looked around.

When Caesar was digging into the grass, he got some creepy feelings. Luckily, Caesar came out soon. However now, the creepy feeling grew even stronger instead of fading away.

Glimpsing at Caesar, he noticed that the wolf's hairs were standing on ends, even though a moment earlier, he was excited with the grass rat.

“Uncle Mai!” Shao Xuan shouted out in a low voice.

Mai was watching his men cutting off the rat wood. Seeing Shao Xuan behaving like that, Mai realized that something was wrong, and he immediately made a gesture to the others with his hand.

---

# Chapter 113 - Caesar's Choice

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

It suddenly quieted down, one could easily hear the sound of the wind blowing through the grass.

They didn't kill the rat yet, since it was better to keep the grass rat alive when cutting down the rat wood. The grass rat struggled whilst caught in a warrior's hand. The seedling of rat wood was cut off, which left a brown bald spot on its skin. After about six months, the bald spot would again be covered with fuzzy green hair.

Mai gave the warrior who held the grass rat a meaningful look. The warrior bent over, placed the grass rat on the ground, and released it.

Like an arrow being released from the string, the grass rat quickly rushed into the high piles of grass once it regained its freedom.

After a few rustling sounds, the area became quiet again, but the atmosphere was still quite stifling.

People didn't sense any signs of ferocious beast in the surroundings, but they all had felt something dangerous lurking in the dark without being spotted by

anyone.

The other party must be very good at hiding, or Mai would have sensed its presence sooner.

That grass rat rushed to the pile of grass without hesitation, which meant that the pile of grass over there was relatively safer.

Half of the people in the hunting team focused their attention in the opposite direction of the grass piles, whilst the others guarded the surroundings.

Huu~~

It was like a gust of wind.

However, there was only a slight breeze, and no such sound could be created naturally.

Meanwhile, Caesar let out a growl, his growl made people's nerves more tense.

Huu~~

There was another prompt but low noise, as if something was flying fast.

It was close!

The trees in the surroundings were not dense, and the sunshine had already lit up the entire forest.

Black shadows flashed by under the sun.

"Over there!"

Mai rushed over there, and in the meantime, another black shadow flew past.

Normally, the animals, especially ferocious beasts, would always pick the weakest in a group to challenge, and Shao Xuan would be the first that suffered. Last year, he had been experiencing that for a whole year, and the other warriors' first instinct was to protect Shao Xuan well. However, this time, the thing rushed towards Caesar without hesitation.

Shao Xuan was about to run forward with his stone knife to block the strike, but to his surprise, Caesar actively aimed at it.

In a short distance, Caesar rapidly sped up, and he almost reached his limit. Like a long bow that was tightened up and then released, he ejected himself to throw his body on that coming creature.

Bang!

Puff!

The sound of a collision and flesh being pierced resounded.

The two of them landed on the ground, fighting close against each other.

The thing that rushed over here was some winged creature that looked like a bat. Its wingspan was around two meters. Perhaps it was bitten by Caesar, for after it landed, it did not manage to fly up again.

However, such a creature should only be active during night. Why would they come out in the daylight?

When these two were fighting against each other, Shao Xuan threw out several spearheads at that bat-like creature. It was Caesar's first time encountering such an opponent in the wild, so highly likely, it would be difficult for him to handle the situation alone. There were already some bloodstains on his body.

The attack of the spearheads distracted the bat.

Puchi.

There was the sound of flesh being torn apart.

Blood spread out.

Caesar literally tore off one of that thing's wings.

A sharp cry almost pierced through the people's eardrums, and the sonic wave dizzied people. But soon, the sound stopped abruptly, because Caesar snapped off the bat's head.

Together with Caesar's growl, there were a few more sounds of flesh being torn. Caesar only stopped after he had torn the remaining flesh into small pieces.

"Come over here, Caesar!"

Shao Xuan stepped forward quickly to check on Caesar's wounds. But before he could approach him, Caesar suddenly looked up at Shao Xuan's direction,

although moments ago, he was staring at the dead bat's remains.

His approach stopped at the very moment, for Shao Xuan felt like a cold bucket of water was poured down on his head. The feeling couldn't have been colder.

At that moment, Shao Xuan was facing a pair of eyes filled with ferocious bloodlust. The cold eyes seemed to be prepared for tearing everything apart.

There were four fangs that were dripping with blood in the wolf's open mouth. Blood dripped down on the fur.

Shao Xuan knew in his mind that Caesar's ferocious nature finally awakened after it had been suppressed for over two years.

Shao Xuan still remembered the wolf packs that lived in the forest where they hunt. And Caesar was similar with those experienced killers.

Even though Caesar had been spending his two years inside the tribe since it was a cub, and had never experienced the normal killing atmosphere in the forest. Even though Caesar was doing great with humans in the tribe, its ferocious nature was still buried in his body. The instinct was only waiting for the proper chance to be awakened, just like a volcano waiting to erupt. The longer it got suppressed, the more violently it would erupt.

Watching Caesar creeping besides the dead bat, Shao Xuan clenched on the stone knife he had in his hand. If Caesar could not control his killing instinct and attack people, no warrior in the hunting team would ever let him survive. Shao Xuan would put Caesar to rest himself, instead of letting others do the job.

It was impossible to say that he was not attached with the wolf after spending so much time together. In two years, the wolf had grown from a fuzzy little cub into a handsome strong wolf that was even taller than Shao Xuan if he stood straight. A lot of things had happened, and many emotions were shared.

Shao Xuan's home changed from a hay bed in the orphan cave to some cabin in the mountain foot area, as Shao Xuan himself grew from a bony little kid into a totem warrior. Caesar was always there with him.



However, at that time, both Shao Xuan and Caesar, who was a little on edge, needed to make a choice. There were three possibilities. First, Caesar attacks the people in the hunting group, and Shao Xuan puts him down personally. Second, Caesar refuses to stay in the hunting team, and Shao Xuan lets him go for the sake of the two years they spent together. Third, Caesar controls his erupting killing nature, and comes back to Shao Xuan.

Shao Xuan put his other hand, that was not holding the stone knife, behind his back to make a gesture to the other warriors, who were already prepared to enter a fight. He indicated that they should stay put, while he himself stared at the wolf that was only ten meters away from him.

Caesar, what will you choose?

In fact, ever since he decided to take Caesar out into the wild, Shao Xuan had expected such circumstances. Although he felt reluctant to face it, the fact was that doing nothing else rather than eating and sleeping in the tribe would finally cost Caesar's life. The Shaman granted Caesar his patterned plate, but he could withdraw it just as well. No comfort pet was allowed to exist in the tribe. Caesar needed to prove his value.

The wolf stood there, breathing heavily, with blood on its mouth and bloodlust in his eyes. Together with his every breath, it released a gust of smell of the weird bat's blood.

However, staring at Shao Xuan, the bloodlust gradually faded away. His pair of eyes became clear again.

Lipping the blood on his mouth, Caesar looked up at Shao Xuan and started approaching him with light paces.

"Ah-Xuan..." Lang Ga couldn't help but warn him. They were really scared off by Caesar's behavior earlier.

When they were within the tribe, people said that Caesar was a wolf that already had been tamed, which meant that he was a total waste. Some might have even suggested that Caesar should be cut into pieces as food. However,

what is this then, when Caesar was behaving like that?

Already been tamed? Total bullshit! That bloodlust chilled Lang Ga's back. He tried real hard not to toss the long spear at Caesar.

A waste? That monster got its wing torn off by the wolf! What kind of waste would that be?!

Of course, an animal was an animal, and killing instinct was in its blood.

Shao Xuan waved to the crowd again, using the empty hand behind his back to tell Lang Ga and the others not to act right now.

Caesar lifted his feet, slowly walking towards Shao Xuan. His paws were still stained with blood. And for every step he made, he would leave a blood print on the ground. There was blood stains on his body as well from when he was tearing down the bat's wing, which made him look more ferocious.

Eight meters... five meters... three meters...

Shao Xuan watched the wolf approach, and he looked at the wolf calmly. However, deep down inside, he knew that his heart was beating rapidly. Shao Xuan reached his empty hand out, but still clenched the stone knife he had in his other hand. He was prepared for whatever choice that Caesar makes.

Caesar breathed heavily and walked towards Shao Xuan step by step. He watched the young totem warrior, and then lowered his head, as if he knew that he was being naughty earlier. Gently, he flapped his ears, and rubbed his head towards Shao Xuan's palm.

At the moment that his palm reached the wolf's head, Shao Xuan took a long breath, and he lowered his other hand with the stone knife.

Just like usual, when Caesar accomplished the task smoothly or did the right thing, Shao Xuan rubbed Caesar's head and said "Good boy."

Caesar's head shook slightly together with Shao Xuan's hand. He also licked Shao Xuan's hand, which put some bat blood on his hand.

"Is it okay, now, Ah-Xuan?" Lang Ga was a little stammered. Caesar looked just like usual now, but the scene earlier was printed in his mind, he was still afraid to approach the wolf. Also, he did not lower the long spear in his hand.

“It’s okay now.” Shao Xuan knew that the others in the hunting group would still be alert with Caesar for quite some time. But, things would get better.

After this experience, Caesar gained his feral nature back, but he managed to keep it under control. That was a good thing.

Pulling Caesar aside, Shao Xuan carefully checked the wounds and claw marks on its body. He took out some medicinal powders that he made himself for the treatment of wounds, and applied them on Caesar’s back, to see if they also worked on animals.

Lang Ga and the others only approached to see the dead bat after Shao Xuan had pulled Caesar aside.

Another bat had also been killed by Mai, and it was even larger than the one that Caesar tore apart. It had sharper claws and longer nails. If that had been Caesar's opponent, perhaps Caesar would have been more badly wounded now.

Why would such things come out during daylight? An older totem warrior in the hunting group wondered.

"Perhaps it was the similar scenario like the thorn black winds last year? They came out during the day." Someone guessed.

"No, it's not the same." Mai shook his head, "The thorn black wind was out during daylight because it wanted revenge against us. However, what're these things after? With so many years' hunting experience, I dare say that this is very rare."

The crowd fell into a silence.

In fact, they were not afraid of that creature at all, as they were not quite the big trouble in this forest. However, they worried that something might be behind this situation. Every abnormal situation could be the portent of something major.

[Yes, that word exists.]

As the silence went on, people suddenly heard some sounds of whistles.

Everyone in their hunting group was there, and no one had ever blown a whistle. Apparently, the whistle was not coming from them. Someone from the other hunting groups made that sound.

"You should stay here, we will go and check." Mai took a few warriors with him. They rushed towards the origin of the whistle.

Soon, Mai brought five people back, and the five warriors were all wounded, with different degrees of injuries.

It was the hunting group that shared a similar hunting route. Last year when Shao Xuan and Mao were chased by the thorn black wind, Mai turned to them for help.

Seeing the dead bat that Mai killed lying on the ground, the first one of the five warriors was shocked, "You encountered it?!"

"This is not the only one. We encountered two of them." Lang Ga and the others stepped aside to show them the one that was put down by Caesar.

"So, it seems that you have encountered them as well?" Mai looked at the injured people.

That warrior sighed deeply, "Yes. I wonder why, they are supposed to come out only during the night, but it's daylight right now. Our hunting group had been attacked by them several times... Oh right, we came here to seek for your help."

The warrior looked at Shao Xuan and Caesar, that was lying beside Shao Xuan's feet calmly, "It's said that your wolf is capable of tracking things down based on the smell?"

Mai did not answer. Instead, he looked at Shao Xuan as well.

Shao Xuan nodded, "Yes."

"A while ago, he caught a grass rat!" Lang Ga said. Although he was still quite alert of Caesar, it did not stop him from showing off to warriors in other hunting groups. When they were heading out from the tribe, they received quite a lot of mocks from other hunting groups.

"We want to borrow it. To help with the situation." That man said, not caring about Lang Ga's tone.

"For what?" asked Mai.

"To help us find a person."

---

# Chapter 114 - The Vampire Bats

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

Of the warriors that came to them, the leading one was called Cha. Cha was almost the same age as Mai, and he was the second strongest person in his hunting group, which meant that he was of great importance in that group. He was also an old experienced hunting warrior. Among the five people, he was the least wounded.

“You lost people in your group?” Mai said with astonishment. It was just the beginning of the hunting trip... apparently, it was extremely abnormal to lose someone.

“We lost three warriors. When we arrived at the first location to rest, they went to fetch some water, and then they never came back.” It was hard for Cha to say this out aloud, for obviously, that incident was a great strike to the whole hunting group. It was not like when someone got killed during a fierce hunting mission. Someone went missing, without knowing why. Even their bodies hadn’t been found, and that was something unacceptable! No one was willing to give up.

“The water-fetching spot was also up in the mountain, not far away from the

cave that we spend the night in. Dangerous animals like ferocious beasts were rarely seen in the nearby region. However, until night, these three never came back. Ah-Cheng took a few men to look for them, but they only found some traces and marks that they left around the water-fetching spot. We waited for another half a day, and people split up to look for them...still, no news... We did encounter a lot of those things while we looked for our missing men.”

Cha rubbed his tired face, and pointed to the dead bat on the ground, “They actively attacked the hunting group... in the daylight! There were dozens of them, and they wounded quite a few of us. Ah-Cheng told me to come ask you for help. But I did not expect that they had already come to you before we did.”

Shao Xuan heard him talking, but in the meantime, he noticed that there seemed to be something wrong with Caesar. He checked his wound, only to find that the injury did show any signs of being bad at all. The blood was still fresh-red, but Caesar looked extremely tired and dizzy.

“It was bitten by the bat, wasn’t it?” Cha asked, “Anyone bitten by that thing would feel feeble and weak. But don’t worry, it won’t die. Let the wolf eat this.”

Cha passed a root-like thing to Shao Xuan. After spending so much time learning about herbs and medicines from the Shaman, of course Shao Xuan recognized the plant. That root had some refreshing effects, and could ease some anesthetic effects caused by toxic plants. However, they were very hard to find in the hunting regions. Moreover, Cha and the others had shared the same negative opinion when they saw Caesar tagging along with the hunting team. He even laughed at Mai when he saw the wolf was in Mai’s hunting group. So, why would he give such precious herb to Caesar now?

Seeing that Mai and Lang Ga were looking at him as well, Cha explained, “I have to count on the wolf to help us find our three men.”

That was true.

In the past, you laughed at us, and now you need our wolf’s help? Lang Ga and the others really wanted to gloat a little, but thinking of the situation right now, their hearts became heavy again.

Men went missing for no apparent reason, nor any sign. They just disappeared inexplicably and vanished in the mist. It was so crazy to even think



of that. They didn't fear to battle with ferocious beasts, however, towards something unknown, they had always been perturbed.

"What did Ah-Cheng say?" Asked Mai.

"Ah-Cheng said that our men had probably been bitten by those disgusting things, so they couldn't resist. It's highly likely that they got dragged away by those things. However, few traces could be found, so it's been difficult tracking them down." Cha glimpsed at Caesar again. The wolf was becoming more and more energetic. "I hope it can help."

Shao Xuan checked the wounds on Caesar's body. After making sure that he was fine, Shao Xuan focused his attention on those two dead bats.

The saliva of the bats had a strong anesthetic effect. Shao Xuan opened their mouths with his stone knife. He noticed that their front teeth were much larger than cheek teeth, while their canine teeth were as sharp as knives. Apparently, the wounds on Caesar's body were caused by those teeth.

Some animals with such teeth clearly had meat in their diet.

Aside from that, the bats' claws were also very sharp, and they had strong hind legs, as well as giant eyes.

"So how're things? Can we go now?" Cha was a little anxious, and he was eager to head back quickly. The more they stalled, the less hope they would have for finding the men they lost. He had no idea what the situation was along their hunting route.

Mai glimpsed at Shao Xuan. Seeing that Shao Xuan nodded, he knew that Caesar was good to go, "Okay. Let's march."

The hunting group first headed back to the cave, to bring more stone tools with them, just in case.

Cha led the way, but they didn't go from the mountaintop. Although it was safer to travel over the mountain, it would take longer time for them to get to the destination. Now, everyone agreed that they were in a big hurry, and had to arrive as soon as possible. Without hesitation, they chose the shortest path.

On their way, they encountered a few more giant bats, and they put them down with joint efforts.

"Everybody watch out! Scratches are fine, but a bite could be pretty bad. I don't have enough herbs on me." Cha reminded the crowd.

"There is less game in the hunting region, for many giant-antler deers and mammoth cows have left their old habitats and ran further away. Even ferocious beasts would rarely come out these days... Never have I met such a situation in the past..."

Hearing that, people understood that it was not a good sign.

Less game meant that they were caught by other predators. Migration of giant-antler deer and mammoth cows might indicate that they were trying to get away from this dangerous place. However, why would there be less ferocious beasts? What would threaten or put fear in the ferocious beasts?

"Indeed, this is not a good thing." Lang Ga and the others whispered. When seeing the big bats, they had an uncomfortable feeling. Now, they were more certain of it.

As they were marching forward, Shao Xuan suddenly heard an unusual sharp scream travelling through the air. However, he checked Lang Ga and the others around him, and noticed that they didn't seem to pay any extra attention to the surroundings. They hadn't heard anything.

Caesar's hair on his back stood up again, and he stared at the sky vigilantly.

Cha walked in the front. Mai, Cha, and a few other mid-level totem warriors

that were leading the group suddenly stopped.

Mai waved his hand to the others, to indicate them to keep quiet and be alert while he focused on listening.

“Is that it?” Mai whispered.

“Yep.” Cha nodded, “But right now, we are not their targets. They are supposed to have found other prey.”

“Did you hear something, Mai? How come that I hear nothing?” Asked Lang Ga.

“Because your ability is limited, so you can’t hear it.” Mai listened carefully for some time, and then pointed to one direction, “Go climb up on the trees! Hide yourselves, and let’s watch the situation first.”

Since Caesar could not climb trees, Shao Xuan asked him to stay hidden behind the grass.

Shao Xuan climbed up a tree next to him, and he hid behind some dense leaves after he reached certain height and could see afar.

Looking up, he saw a tree fox standing on a branch above. At that time, the tree fox was all tensed up, with his hairs standing up. It kept its mouth wide open, with fear in its eyes. That preparedness and fear were not meant for Shao Xuan, but the approaching creatures in the sky. However, as it was being extremely vigilant, Shao Xuan jumped up out of nowhere and frightened it so much, that it almost fell from the branch.

The tree fox glared at Shao Xuan with its big round eyes for a while, to make sure that Shao Xuan was of not a threat. After confirming his safety, it bared its teeth towards Shao Xuan, and throw some part of some insect that hadn’t been eaten yet at Shao Xuan’s face. It seemed that the tree fox was very angry about Shao Xuan startling it.

Shao Xuan moved his head to avoid the insect residue that flew towards him.

The insect smashed on the trunk directly, but a few drops of splashing green liquid glued on Shao Xuan's face.

Without any facial expression, Shao Xuan wiped away the liquid on his face, and cursed in his mind. The little thing indeed had a bad temper.

However, it was not like Shao Xuan would start a pointless fight because of that incident.

Suddenly, the tree fox looked away in some direction.

And that direction, was where Mai pointed at earlier.

Like everybody else, Shao Xuan hid behind dense branches and leaves. He looked through the gaps of the leaves.

It was very quiet in the surroundings, but there was some silent fear and anxiety.

In the front on a flat grassy area, four roebucks stood there, facing four different directions. Their ears were standing up straight, and they looked very tense.

Whoosh.

Black shadows flashed in the sky, and promptly, they landed on the grassy area.

Not just one bat... There were a total of eleven bats that landed on that spot, surrounding the four roebucks.

For most bats, it was very difficult for them to walk when they landed on the ground. When they walked, they were slow. However, when these bats landed and retracted their wings, they seemed to have very strong long legs and forelimbs.

Any one of the eleven bats seemed to be bigger than the one that Mai slaughtered.

When the eleven bats landed around the roebucks, they quickly ran towards their prey.

The roebucks tried to jump out of the siege, but as soon as they made a leap, they would hit against a giant bat that jumped up as well.

One giant bat got slammed back for a few meters, but it rolled over on the grass, and stood up on its feet again to start another attack. Their sharp teeth were like razors, and they tore down a piece of skin of the roebuck.

Blood began to spread.

The roebucks were becoming slower and slower after they got bitten by the bats. At first, they did not manage to get out, and now, even the chance of survival was slim.

Four roebucks all got bitten on their bodies, and one of them was starting to have soft legs already.

Those bats did not start another round of attack. Instead, they waited with patience.

When finally, the last roebuck hit the ground, the bats began to grab the roebucks who had fainted with joint efforts, instead of having a feast right there. Two or three bats grabbed on one roebuck, and flew away with their wings wide open.

After the bats left, people from the hunting team gathered under a tree. Everyone was feeling sour and sad at the same time.

“It seems that they have no intention of eating their prey immediately.” Said Mai.

Cha responded with a gloomy face, “That’s why Ah-Cheng said that we should find our missing men as soon as possible. At least, now we have seen that thing’s behavior. Since they were not eaten on the scene, it’s possible that they are still alive.”

“They are behaving as if they are trying to store food. But winter is already over.” Some older warrior said, “Then, to whom are they serving the food?”

The crowd fell into a silence.

“Let’s find the missing men first.” Cha sighed.

When Cha guided Mai and the others to their first holdout to meet with their hunting group leader, Ah-Cheng, Ah-Cheng was applying herbs on some wounded warrior.

“What’s happened? Another strike?” Cha hurried to them to check on the wounded warriors.

“It’s not bad. No one has a grave injury.” Ah-Cheng walked towards Mai with a slight smile on his sad face, “Finally, you’re here.”

Ah-Cheng looked over and set his eyes on Caesar, who was standing beside Shao Xuan, “Unexpectedly, we need to rely on it this time.”

When the two hunting group leaders were exchanging information, Shao

Xuan observed the situation in the cave.

The hunting warriors were so high-spirited and energetic when they set off from the tribe. However now, the crowd could not have been droopier. Perhaps, deep down, they were all worried about their companions' inexplicable disappearance, and the crisis that might come later.

Everyone had wounds on their bodies. Luckily, most of them were scratches, and few got bitten.

"A fortune in the misfortune is that we did not bring those young lads with us, or else..." Ah-Cheng did not continue, but everyone knew what he was talking about.

If there were any newly awakened warriors in this hunting group, they would be the ones that received most of the attacks, just like Shao Xuan last year. Newly awakened young warriors hardly had any experience in hunting. Any careless mistake might end up with a dreadful death.

"Ah-Xuan, we need to rely on you and Caesar next." Said Ah-Cheng.

---



# Chapter 115 - The Giant Pit

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

There was still some time before it would become dark. In order to find the missing men as soon as possible, the hunting group leader immediately showed Shao Xuan around.

“I would like to know whether they went straight to the water spot after they left the cave.” Cheng told Shao Xuan.

Although they knew that the missing men were fetching water for the group, Cheng still wanted Caesar to help him confirm on that.

“Okay.” Shao Xuan answered.

From inside the cave, Shao Xuan asked someone to bring the items that those missing men had used for Caesar to sniff, so that Caesar could memorize their smell.

Cheng and Mai each took a dozen warriors, and they headed out with Shao Xuan.

“We tried to follow those things, thinking to find their old nests. However, we followed a few groups of bats, only to find that they had different nests.” Said

Cheng.

The first reason that Cha went to find Mai and the others for help was to borrow Caesar, and see if they could find their missing men with the wolf's help. For starters, they needed to make sure where they were when they were taken by the giant bats. However, there was also a second reason. No matter whether or not they would manage to find their missing men, they still had to look for help, given that they lost three warriors out of blue, and the current situation couldn't be more abnormal. The resources that they could turn to for help were of course Mai and his men in his hunting group. They were very close to each other.

Cheng sighed deeply as he stared at the wolf that was walking in the very front.

Caesar walked in front of everyone, and he was sniffing around as he walked.

After they left the cave, they indeed walked directly towards the water spot. However, Caesar made a sudden stop along the way.

Shao Xuan closely observed Caesar's reaction, and interpreted, "One of the three went that way."

Cheng looked at the direction that Shao Xuan pointed towards, and shook his head, "There are no forests, no caves, and no water over there. Normally, no one would enter that area."

"We haven't searched that area thoroughly." Said Cha.

Cheng kept silent for a few seconds, and then said, "Let's go to the water spot first." One out of the three left in between, but all three of them went missing. What did the other two encounter on their way while fetching water?

The water spot that Cheng's hunting group used was a naturally formed water pool near the mountain side. It was not far from the cave at the first location.

"Normally we fetch water from here in small groups of three. There are no extremely dangerous ferocious beasts up here. Even if we encountered one or two, we can easily manage to escape successfully. I myself came to fetch water from here quite a few times. However, this time it's different." Cha pointed at the grass beneath their feet.

There were some pressure marks on the grass, which were probably caused by the missing men when they fell down on the ground. Many grassleaves got crushed down, and there were claw marks and blade scratches on a stone nearby.

The blade scratches were made by the stone swords of the missing warriors, and the claw marks were identified as similar with the claw marks of the giant bats. The only difference was that they were much bigger.

If the missing warriors were taken from the air, then it's no wonder that no one in Cheng's hunting group could track them down. Because aside from the traces and marks here, there were no other useful clues.

However, if they were taken from the air, even Caesar with his good sense of smell would find it hard to continue the searching mission.

"Let's go check that lone one." Cheng was a little disappointed.

"Okay." That was the only option left.

People walked back and returned to the spot where the three warriors split up earlier. Here, one of the warriors left in advance. Caesar carefully identified the smell and led people deeper into that area.

At first, they were wandering around the mountain side, but later, they headed up towards the mountaintop.

“I remember. There are a lot of rocks and only have narrow paths. We have been here once in the past.” Said Cha.

Cheng looked around, and added, “Sometimes, mountain antelopes would appear in this area.”

“There’s smell of blood.” Cha suddenly claimed.

Not only Cha, Mai and some others detected that smell as well.

However, now the wind was not blowing in the same direction. At the moment it was difficult for them to tell where the smell of blood came from.

People continued following Caesar until they reached a giant rock, where there was the dead body of a mountain antelope.

There were a lot of torn-up wounds on the mountain antelope’s body. Judging from the traces, the wounds were caused by those giant bats. There were blood stains on the ground, but there weren’t many of them. Most of the blood was sucked up by the bats.

If they hadn’t followed Caesar to this place, people in the hunting group would have hardly thought of searching in this region. After all, they rarely came to this place in the past. Neither would they ever have guessed that someone from the water-fetching group would come here.

“He must have heard something, so he chased after the sound.” Said Cha.

The one that came here was the strongest person among the three missing warriors. He probably wouldn’t have thought that he would encounter those giant bats in the middle of their hunt. Then he himself became a prey, and now, no one knew whether he was still alive, and no one knew where he was brought

to.

“If they had eaten the food, the food would be left here. Whenever a being was taken by them means that they did not eat it yet.” Said Mai.

Disappearance was better than dead. At least, they had a chance of being alive.

People looked at Caesar, seeing that he was sniffing on the ground. Caesar walked towards some direction, sniffed on the ground again, and then looked up at Shao Xuan.

“Judging from that, Caesar seems to have found something.” Said Shao Xuan.

“Something on the ground?”

Cha walked towards Caesar quickly, and poked his finger into the earth beneath Caesar’s nose. He then put his finger under his nose to smell carefully. Cha couldn’t help but frown, it was smelly. “So what is this odd smell?”

“Perhaps it’s the things’...urine.” Shao Xuan made a quick guess.

“Their urine?”

“Yes. They need to let out the liquid when they have eaten too much in order to make their bodies lighter, and to fly easier.” Shao Xuan explained.

Hearing Shao Xuan’s speculation, Mai and some other warriors all nodded. They thought that the guess and explanation were reasonable.

With that clue, people became spirited again as they continued to follow Caesar.

Walking out of the area of giant rocks, people noticed that there were not many trees in the surroundings. They kept walking forward for some distance, getting near the water-fetching spot. However, instead of going to the water spot, Caesar led people forward.

“Those things kept peeing all along the way?” Cha asked.

“I guess the smell was there the whole way, and... there is also the smell of human combined in it.” Shao Xuan watched Caesar’s actions and said.

“What do you mean?” Cheng looked at Shao Xuan.

“In other words, the one that got captured probably got peed all over his body.” Shao Xuan said.

That’s probably true! Warriors all wore thick animal skin clothes when they went out to fetch water, which could soak a lot of liquid, and then drops of urine leaked along the way.

That warrior really had bad luck. He only went out of the cave to get some water, but he got caught by a giant bat, and got urine all over the body. However, just because of that, the others might be able to find them with the traces and clues he left.

People followed Caesar as they walked in the mountain. Sometimes when the smell stopped, they had to enlarge the searching area.

Mai was a little worried since it was getting dark, “We probably won’t be able to head back before night. Is there any cave around here?”

“We rarely came to this region in the past. There were a lot of bat caves, though. We followed them and found quite a few holes and caves right in this mountain valley.”

“Where are their caves?” Shao Xuan asked.

Cheng pointed in a few directions. “Those holes and caves are not on our hunting route. We are not familiar with the surroundings.”

Caesar already stopped walking. The smell had stopped again. This time, they

might not be able to continue the search anymore.

“Now what?” Cha looked around. They were standing on some hill that was not too high. There were no trees nearby. On the ground there was only grass.

Nothing abnormal was in the surroundings, since they could see what was happening around them.

Shao Xuan stood there, feeling that the totem in his mind seemed to be very active right now. Looking at the others, it seemed that none of the others were having similar situations.

Shao Xuan carefully observed the direction that the flame on his totem fluttered towards, and looked at that direction. Over there was the top of that hill. Since it was not high enough, there was no snow, just a patch of grass.

Shao Xuan walked towards that direction. Mai and the others assumed that Shao Xuan probably identified the right direction based on Caesar’s behavior, so they tagged along.

Step by step, they approached the top of the hill, and the totem in his mind became more energetic. Aside from that, Shao Xuan heard something, like an airflow flowing quickly. It was like an amplified snore.

“Uncle Mai, did you hear something?” Asked Shao Xuan.

“No...Oh, yes, I heard something. It’s the howling of those things...no, not clear...perhaps it’s too far...” said Mai.

“I heard something, too.” Cheng hurriedly ran towards the top of the hill.

The howling of the bats? Shao Xuan frowned. No, it isn’t. At least, what he heard was definitely not from the bats.

Cheng was the first to reach the top, but he suddenly stood there still, as if he had seen something stunning.

“Did you find something?” Mai and the others sped up as well, and they reached the top after a few leaps.

Just like Cheng, the others were stunned.

In front of them, there was a big pit in the ground, with the diameter of more than 100 meters and the depth of over 80 meters, at least.

The inner wall of the pit was not as barren as the rest of the hill. It was like a different world inside.

Several thick roots and vines intertwined with each other as they went downwards. The leaves were spreading like giant umbrellas. There were different kinds of plants growing on the walls, with some of them bearing fruits and flowers.

“This is....”

Since they had never been out this far, Cheng had no idea that there was such a big pit. When they chased after those bats, they did not think about heading up to the top.

Shao Xuan looked down to the bottom of the pit as he was standing on the edge. It was not dark. With sufficient daylight, people could see the situation in the bottom. However, compared with the walls of the pit, there were much fewer plants growing on the bottom. Only some unknown plants were spread out in a monotonous way.

The totem in his mind became extremely active, and the flames danced as they wrapped the two horns.

Something down there was luring the totem.

“There are quite a few kinds of rare herbs at the bottom! Some plants I’ve only seen in the animal skin rolls at the Shaman’s place.” Shao Xuan said.

Mai and Cheng exchanged a meaningful glance, and said, “We’ll head down to



check the situation. You guys wait here for our call.”

Mai went down along the vines with Cha, Cheng, and a few other warriors, to see if it was dangerous down there. They needed to check it out. Shao Xuan, Lang Ga and some others remained by the edge of the pit, waiting.

Just like Shao Xuan had said, there were a lot of fine herbs at the bottom, among which there were the type they used to detoxify the bat’s bites. It was such a nice surprise for the warriors.

After circling around roughly, Cheng waved towards the warriors waiting up there, to indicate that they could climb down. Even doing that, people had to be cautious, for there were still unknown dangers and risks.

The vines had some burrs and they were not smooth at all, which was a good thing for the warriors. It made their movements easier.

Shao Xuan climbed down with the others, but he left Caesar to wait at the top.

There were quite a lot of herbal plants on the walls of the pit, and people hurriedly cut down the ones they knew that could be used for emergencies.

Shao Xuan did not focus on the rare plants and medicines on the walls. After they landed on the bottom, he felt that the flames on his totem seemed to be more excited.

He looked down at his feet.

There were piles of bat droppings.

---

# Chapter 116 - The Fire Crystal

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

It smelled pretty bad inside.

Thick layers of bat feces covered the ground, and it seemed to have been piled up for years. The upper layer was a little bit fresher, which indicated that the giant bats come here almost every day. It's only that they haven't seen them right now. Perhaps they would come later when it becomes dark at night.

On the walls of the pit, there were a lot of big cracks with diameters that varied from one meter to a few meters. Some sounds came out of the crevices, which were the origins of the sound that they heard earlier. The screams of bats could be heard by almost everybody. However, some of the sounds exceeded the hearing abilities of junior totem warriors. Only intermediate warrior like Mai could capture them. Perhaps, there were some noises that even Mai and the other intermediate warriors couldn't hear.

The sound of airflow rapidly flowing by was always there, and it rang every now and then in a very rhythmic way. Shao Xuan was the only one that could hear it.

Although the sounds of bats came out from those wide crevices, it still sounded from afar. Just because of that, Mai and Cheng allowed the other warriors to climb down the pit. Still, they warned them to be extra careful so they don't make any noise.

There were claw marks around the crevices, which were similar with the ones they found on the rock near the water spot. Those hook-like sharp claws of the giant bats enabled them to hold on the crevices of the rocks tight and move easily.

"Ah-Cheng!" Cha whispered.

Cha found a stone sword near the big crevices, and it was from one of the missing warriors.

"It seems that they indeed had been brought in here, and got dragged into those cracks." Cheng glared at the wide big crevices with hateful eyes. He wanted to slaughter those things and kill them all. However, now it was not a good time. They had too few men, while the bats were too large in quantities.

There were a lot of crevices spread all over the walls, which reminded Cha of the holes they found when they were tracking the bats down. Perhaps the holes in the hill were all connected with the crevices in here.

None of them had any idea of how long the crevices were, or where they extended to. All they could do was speculate. However, those things had similar abnormal behaviors, so at least half of their speculations were true.

Shao Xuan kept staring at the ground under his feet. In the meantime, he carefully experienced the direction of the totem flames in his mind.

Unlike when he was outside of the pit, now the flames on his totem had no specific direction. They were just rolling and dancing in a fierce way.

More or less, the others might also have sensed it, but they had no clear and obvious feelings as Shao Xuan was experiencing. They assumed that it was because they were in a dangerous place, and they were too nervous, being alert of potential dangers, which could appear at any time. Nobody thought about the totem.

Shao Xuan lifted his foot slowly, and walked forward.

He was not walking fast. Instead, every step that he took was very careful. The others thought that Shao Xuan was doing that in case he made any noise. But aside from that, Shao Xuan was feeling the changes when he made every step.

Something was influencing the totem. According to the totem's reaction, it felt like some object from the Shaman's Volumes that he read in the Shaman's place. It could be embedded on the walls, or buried under his feet. There was more than just one of them.

However, the giant pit was too large. It was impossible for him to carefully check every inch of it since he also had to prevent all the possible crises at any time. All he could do was to feel it roughly, to see if he could locate a general spot.

One step...two steps...ten steps...

Suddenly, Shao Xuan stopped.

It was in here!

Shao Xuan squatted down, and wiped off the layer of bat droppings on the surface with his stone knife. There revealed the ground in the bottom of the pit.

The ground down there was very hard, a lot harder than normal stones. No wonder there were not too many plants in this area. There were only a few grasses and plants here and there. They were all tenacious grasses and plants that they grew in this place.

The rock-like ground was very hard. Shao Xuan tried the rigidity and found that his tooth sword was able to prise off the surface.

Shao Xuan did not mind the filthy feces around, but placed his palm on the ground to feel the origin that aroused the totem in his mind.

It was not buried deep. It was just under his palm. He sensed that he might be able to grasp it in his hand as long as he digs a little. However, that would make too much noise.

Just at that time, Shao Xuan heard Caesar roaring in a deep voice above.

“Uncle Mai! Something’s coming from the sky!” Said Shao Xuan.

Just after Caesar gave them a warning, Shao Xuan promptly rolled over to hide under the leaves of the vines, so that the thing from the sky won’t spot him easily.

“Hide!”

Mai and Cheng both called their warriors to hide themselves.

The others did not say much, but all made quick reactions. They hid behind vines and other plants.

Thirty warriors quickly found their own shelter, and it was very difficult for anything to notice their existence from above.

Not long after that, there appeared some noises from the sky.

Shao Xuan looked through the gaps of the leaves, and realized that a few jet

black giant bats were flying down to the pit from the sky. They were all very large, and the smallest of them had the wingspan of no less than five meters.

They were in groups of two, holding giant-antler deers. It seemed that they attacked a herd of giant-antler deers.

Earlier, they heard that the giant-antler herd had already migrated from this place. They were not sure whether the bats attacked another giant-antler deer herd, or they directly went after the one that had already migrated.

Flying down from above, the bats came to a wide crevice, and flew inside with their prey, one after another, until they disappeared in the dark crack. However, during this process, a dark-brown bat with thicker fur remained outside, with its eyes staring at the pit.

Compared with their visual ability, their sense of smell and hearing were actually a lot shaper. It had not seen any abnormal signs, but it smelled something different.

It opened its mouth wide and revealed the knife-like sharp teeth. With a slight move of its specialized nose, it said something that was beyond most people's sense of hearing. Immediately after that, it suddenly pedaled the wall hard, spread its wings, and flew towards some spot like a gust of wind.

Someone was hiding there, and he was the closest to the bat!

They were spotted!!

The one hiding there had to pick up his long spear to defend himself, which meant that hiding was no longer an option, and they needed to leave as soon as possible. The bats here outnumbered them by hundreds of times.

“Go!!” Cheng shouted out to tell everybody to retreat. Once those things find people, they would call on their companions, and more of them would fly to this spot quickly. Now, they had too few people, they had to leave as soon as possible.

Shao Xuan rushed towards the spot that he felt something. In a few seconds, he put all the strength on his arms to stab the tooth knife. Sparks flickered from the knife as he constantly stabbed down on the ground.

Bang, bang, bang!

Stone chips splashed.

The thing beneath the surface got dug out.

Without attending to anything else, Shao Xuan held the thing in his hand tightly, and pedaled on the ground hard to retreat in the fastest speed. He had no time to care about how much bat feces was glued on his pants, but rushed towards the giant vines to climb up along the vines like a handy monkey.

When Shao Xuan was digging on the ground, Mai glimpsed at him, for he heard something. That glimpse angered him so much that his head almost sent out smoke!

What the hell was wrong with this lad?! Even if that was some rare plant, how could it be more precious than his own life? How could he care for things instead of running for his life!!

Fortunately, Shao Xuan’s moves were quick. It took him less than a breath from digging to running towards the vines. He was not falling behind.

After they came out of the pit, Cheng led the others to run towards the first



location.

“Get the fuck out of here, now!”

Some sharp voice came from the giant pit, which was heard by everybody. Looking back, their scalps tingled.

In the sky above the giant pit, numerous huge bats fluttered their wings, and more bats joined the crew.

They sped up to run for survival.

This time, people did not choose to escape from the mountaintop. There were not many trees on the mountain, and it would be better for them to run through the woods at the mountain foot, where they might encounter one ferocious beast or two to help them stall the bats. Compared with the bat army, they felt that the ferocious beasts in the woods were a lot more adorable.

Of course, it depended on the species of ferocious beast. If the ferocious beast they pulled out did not cause the bats any trouble, but blocked their escape route, they would be asking for death themselves.

The army of bats chased after them for some time. However, warriors hid while attracting different ferocious beasts to block the bats. Finally, the bats gave up on following them.

Even though the army of bats did not chase after them for long, people did not stop running. They only slowed down their paces until they reached their familiar hunting area.

Here, they took a little break to make sure that the bats were not on their tails. Or it would be bigger trouble if the bats followed them to their first hideout.

“How’s it?” Mai looked at Cheng and Cha, that were checking the surroundings.

“They didn’t follow.” Answered Cheng.

They looked at Caesar again. Judging from the wolf’s behavior, it looked like they were not in trouble or something.

Then the crowd was finally relieved.

Mai eased a little when he counted the numbers and confirmed they did not lose anyone. However, when he looked at Shao Xuan, he was infuriated again.

Mai walked towards Shao Xuan in big steps and clenched on his animal skin top, “Do you have a death wish?! What kind of things are worth your life?! Do you know that you almost became their dessert?! I should have just kept you away from the pit!!”

He was outraged, which was a rare thing. He treated Shao Xuan like a kid from his own family. Last year, when Shao Xuan had the accident, he often blamed himself for not paying more attention to him. Luckily, Shao Xuan turned out to be fine in the end. However today, Shao Xuan committed such a big mistake, although he was always doing good and obeyed orders. What was worth the risk of losing his life in such an emergency?!

Cha breathed heavily as he sat on the ground. He shook his head and talked to himself in his mind, “It’s good that he’s not from our group, or first thing first, I would beat him up myself.”

Shao Xuan was a little stunned as he got lifted up by his collar by Mai. Ever

since he joined the hunting team, he had never seen Mai being so furious. However, he knew that Mai was doing that for his good. It was not just blame, it was out of care and love.

Lang Ga wanted to ease things up, but as he made only one step forward, he was glared at by Mai. Lang Ga smiled in embarrassment, and did not step forward further.

“What was so precious that’s worth your life? Take it out! Whatever you dug up!” If they weren’t in the current situation, Mai would have probably roared.

“I’m sorry. I was not thinking. Indeed, that was impulsive.” Shao Xuan knew that he was a little too eager. Next time, he needed to be calm.

As he said, Shao Xuan reached out his fist, palms up. Shao Xuan slowly unclenched his fingers in front of Mai and revealed the thing he was holding.

“It’s just a...” Seeing the thing in Shao Xuan’s palm, Mai suddenly thought about something. Before he could finish his sentence, he froze there, like he was being strangled by the neck. His face turned red, and for a moment, he could barely breath, as if he did not believe what he saw.

Cha wanted to get closer to see, but to his surprise, before he could get up on his feet, he was pushed away by Cheng, who was stepping up fast.

Cheng pushed away Cha in front of him, and stared at the red crystal in Shao Xuan’s hand. Like Mai, he had red eyes. Perhaps it was out of excitement, or their eyes were reflecting the small crystal.

“The Fire Crystal...”

---

# Chapter 117 - The Union of Five Hunting Groups

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

“The Fire Crystal?!” Cheng couldn’t help it but his voice somehow trembled. He was unable to be calm at the moment.

Mai slowly put Shao Xuan down as he stared at the red crystal in his hand. Mai tried to reach out his hand to take the crystal, but thinking of something, he was a little hesitant.

Shao Xuan put out his hand, and flipped it to drop the crystal down.

Mai hurriedly grabbed it, as if he was afraid it would drop down on the ground. He held it in his hand as if he were holding something beyond precious. Nervous, excited, unbelieving, he was drowned in the mixture of different emotions, and even he himself couldn’t tell what he was feeling right now.

With the crystal in his hand, Mai felt that a stream of warmth was distributing into the air. However, the warm stream could only extend to the close surrounding of the crystal, and not extend to a larger area, as if it was being

imprisoned.

The whole crystal was in the size of a quail egg, with an irregular shape. It was not clean on the surface, for some stone chips were still attached to its surface. However, traces of light shone on the red crystal from the gaps of the leaves. The light was not so bright, but it covered a veil of thick red shadow around this quail-egg-sized red crystal.

Above, the leaves were dancing in the wind, which caused traces of light to move constantly. It looked like the red shadow was also dancing around the red crystal, like fascinating flames.

“Is it really the Fire Crystal?!”

Cheng trembled as he approached Mai. He wanted to take it for a closer look, but Mai clenched his hand to hold onto the crystal tightly.

Seeing Mai like that, Cheng opened his eyes wide. His beard on the cheek even began to tremble and he said, “Are you not giving it to me?!” He said slowly, stressing each syllable.

Cheng looked at Mai, and it seemed like he would start a fight right now if Mai prevented him from seeing the crystal. The muscles on Mai’s face were also twitching, and he was not sure what kind of expression to make.

These two people confronted each other for a while, before Mai slowly opened his fingers. It was much slower than when Shao Xuan opened his fingers, as if it was slow-motion. As he opened all his fingers, he emphasized again, “It was found by a warrior in our group!”

Cheng just ignored Mai’s “It was found by a warrior in our group”, and took the red crystal from Mai’s hand right away.

It didn’t feel like a regular stone. Instead of feeling cold and hard, he felt a stream of warmth.

“The Fire Crystal...it is indeed the Fire Crystal!” Cheng was reluctant to give it back once he held it in his hand.

The Fire Crystal was an extremely valuable stone for people in the tribe. It contained the energy that totem warriors needed, and could help enhance the

strength of totem warriors.

There was a special method for the absorption of the Fire Crystal. It needed to be put in the flames in the fire pit. Some of the energy would be absorbed by the fire pit, while the other part of the energy would be absorbed by people standing around the fire pit.

Over twenty years ago, someone in Gui He's hunting team found a small Fire Crystal that was a little bigger than a pinkie finger nail. At that time, a dozen junior warriors turned into intermediate warriors overnight. And a few intermediate warriors' totem patterns grew by a lot, even though they did not become senior totem warriors. Their totem patterns were slightly over the elbows, but then they reached their wrists.

A long time ago, some shaman once said that whoever found the Fire Crystal, he would have the priority access to use it. No matter if that person was from the mountaintop or the mountain foot area. No one else could ever interfere with the usage of it. However, there's a rule that people must use it as a whole hunting group. Whichever hunting group's person found the Fire Crystal, they could bring their families to benefit as well.

This is very tempting to any warrior in the tribe, not only Mai and Cheng.

“Have you seen enough of it? Give it back to us! It was found by someone in our group!”

Mai wanted to have it back, but Cheng was reluctant to give it back.

Shao Xuan saw these two hunting group leaders arguing over that piece of stone, like no one else was watching. Weren't they afraid of attracting those big bats or ferocious beasts if they made too much noise?

As these two were snatching over the crystal, Cheng said, “Our group joined the mission. Your guys weren't the only ones at the scene! Don't think of hogging it all!”

Seeing those two group leaders acting like that, the other warriors in the two groups joined the discussion. Some of them had no idea what a Fire Crystal was. But when they were briefed in by their mates, they began to stare at Cheng's clenched hand with desire and fiery eyes.

Warriors in the tribe had a persistent pursuit of power, and they were willing to face any kinds of risks or crises to obtain power and strength.

The two sides were in a deadlock for a while, but suddenly, someone asked Shao Xuan, “Where did you find the Fire Crystal, Ah-Xuan?”

At that question, the two group leaders stopped to look at Shao Xuan.

“In the giant pit before.” Said Shao Xuan.

Mai gave up on fighting over it with Cheng, for he knew that it was impossible for Cheng to take it for himself. The Shaman wouldn't allow that.

“Before you left, it was the Fire Crystal that you dug out?” Asked Mai.

“Yes, I was feeling that something was beneath my feet, and it felt good. Later when we retreated, I felt reluctant to miss it, so I started digging.” Said Shao Xuan, “I'm sorry, but I will be more smart next time.”

“No, no, no. I would be more impulsive if I were you!” Cheng said. If he was sensing a Fire Crystal beneath his feet, perhaps he would start digging right away?



However, not everybody could sense the Fire Crystal. After all, Ah-Xuan was learning from the Shaman. People all believed that the Shaman was the reason why Shao Xuan could find the Fire Crystal. People tended to believe whatever that was related to the Shaman, without raising any questions.

Now, Cha couldn't help but think why Ah-Xuan wasn't on his group?

But soon enough, people realized another thing.

Cheng was breathing somewhat heavily, but he tried to ease his tone and asked Shao Xuan, "Have you felt the existence of other Fire Crystal when we were back in the giant pit?"

"Yes!" Shao Xuan was positive.

When they were running for their lives, Shao Xuan felt some of them, but he did not have the time to dig them up.

At the end of Shao Xuan's sentence, it grew extremely quiet in the surroundings. Then, heavy breathing could be heard.

There were Fire Crystals...

More than one piece of Fire Crystal...

And they were so large in size...

“Boss!”

“Let’s go back for more Fire Crystals!”

“Yes, let’s go!”

Warriors in Cheng’s group all became heated, and they wanted to run back immediately.

“Wait a second. Wait! Let’s think about it first!”

Cheng began to pace around, to think about what was the right thing to do. Even when he was pacing, he did not loosen up his fist.

Shao Xuan noticed that people in the tribe seemed to be fond of pacing around when they became excited.

Every time when he saw them pacing, Shao Xuan would think of the dog that he had in his last life. Every time before it pooped, it paced around.

“If I had known that there were Fire Crystals in the pit, I would rather die to bring more Crystals back, even if I had to fight against those things.” Said Cheng, “But now that we are back, we need to think about it properly.”

“Indeed. We should make proper preparations. No way to rush it.” Mai said it in good words, but his tone was hurried. They were all thinking about the Fire Crystals.

“Let’s go back first!” Said Cheng.

“Okay! Let’s go!” A group of warriors were about to run with holding stone swords and long spears.

“Where are you guys going?! I meant that we should go back to the cave at our holdout first!” Cheng shouted as his beard trembled.

People's excitement dropped.

When they got back to the cave in their first holdout, Mai finally got the Fire Crystal back from Cheng. He told Shao Xuan that he would keep it for him. Shao Xuan did not mind that at all, for Mai had no intention of keeping it for himself. Plus, the benefit of the Fire Crystal would always be for the whole group. No one would be left out.

Mai, Cheng, and some other experienced warriors were having a meeting to discuss about the Fire Crystal. Since Shao Xuan was the one who found it, they brought Shao Xuan into the discussion.

After a night's meeting, these two group leaders finally made the call. They decided to call the other three hunting groups.

When Shao Xuan said that there were other Fire Crystals in the giant pit, he thought about what he should do if Cheng and Mai wanted to go back and fight just by themselves. He would stop them from going back and refuse to help. They had too few people, which meant that they were not strong enough to get back those treasures.

After calming down, people realized that two hunting groups were far from able to defeat that many giant bats. Let alone that there were wounded warriors among them. People were not in the right mood.

Mai and Cheng took out an animal skin roll, and wrote down a few sentences that they wanted to convey to the other three hunting groups as the hunting group leaders. It would be up to them whether they wanted to come. However, they would rush over in one breath as long as they were not idiots.

“Now the other groups should still be near the first holdout. They can’t have traveled too far. We can reach them if we hurry.”

Mai and Cheng sent a few warriors each to deliver the letters to the other three hunting groups.

In the cave, the wounded warriors focused on recuperation, while the not injured ones would go hunt the bats down, day and night, whenever they had time. When they found a bat, they killed it!

In the past, they would try to avoid the encounters, but now, since they knew it was about the Fire Crystal, they had a totally different attitude. Every day, it was like they were on steroids, and would go out with stone swords and long spears whenever they had the chance.

The other three group leaders all acted quickly after they received the animal skin rolls. The quickest group arrived the second day, and the slowest arrived on the third day’s morning, with all the warriors in their hunting groups.

They wouldn’t be able to finish their hunting routes this time, but none of them had any disagreements towards that. Even the ancestors would crawl out from their graves to vote yes, if they knew about it. Every warrior came here

voluntarily, and they were all anxious to come quickly, for fear that being late meant being unable to cut a piece from this cake.

There were five hunting groups in total, and five group leaders jointly decided that this time, they would mainly target the giant pit. But before that, they needed to find good countermeasures.

While the five group leaders came up with the right countermeasures, members of the five hunting groups were ready to battle every day.

Before, when they heard about the abnormal scenery, they were anxious, apprehensive, and afraid. However, now none of those feelings ever existed. All the warriors had sharpened their stone tools, and they were thinking about slaughtering more bats every day.

Someone that got bitten by a bat was resting in the cave. During his sleep, he got up, stumbled along the walls, and murmured, "Let me go...I can... I can chop off their heads!"

His hunting mate smiled at the others in the cave regretfully, and dragged him back, "Okay, okay, you can chop off their heads." Then, with one hard punch, he knocked him out and dragged him to a corner for him to sleep at.

[Aw, so gentle and caring. And I'm not sure if that is sarcasm or not.]

After he settled down his mate, he turned over to find that everybody was staring at him. He said with pure innocence, "Our boss said that we don't have enough herbs. This one got bitten and he needs to get a night's sleep to recover after he took the herbs. Sleeping helps him recover."

Warriors from the five hunting groups all got together in the cave of the first holdout. It was a little crowded, but no one minded that. Now, people were filled with hope in their hearts. They all hoped to make faster progress, while Mai and the other group leaders all dreamt about getting nearer to becoming a senior warrior. Normally, the resources that they had were relatively limited, especially for the majority, who lived in the mountain foot area. They had bigger ambitions for themselves and for their families.

As for the advance group...

Well, the advance group had already gone too far to be found.

---

# Chapter 118 - Smoke

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

Every day, the five hunting groups would send people to check the situation of the giant pit. There was still no news of the three missing men from Cheng's hunting group since.

The warrior checking on the giant pit would always observe from afar, as they did not have the chance to enter the caves of those bats. There were flying bats everywhere around the cave's entrance, and it was a lot more than those around the crevices in the giant pit.

It had already been seven days. According to the people's speculation, those three missing men had slim chances of survival. However, since it concerned the Fire Crystal, and that now it was a joint operation of five hunting groups, it was impossible for them to act impulsively without sufficient preparation. Or else it won't be just three men that they lost. It probably would be three teams that went missing.

"A lot of prey was brought inside, but nothing could be seen to have been tossed out." A scout from the giant pit said.

Those bats would never take away the things that they already chewed on. Besides, they had never finished eating any creature, because it was the blood that appealed to them. Once they finished draining out the blood, they would lose their interest in it.

During these seven days, Shao Xuan went to the giant pit together with the most experienced and excellent warriors. That was an even more careful mission.

Shao Xuan carefully checked a few spots, and he only found one place with the Fire Crystals buried close to the surface. They would have to dig deeper for the rest.

When they dug out the one that was near the surface, of course they disturbed those big bats and were chased after for some while.

However, oddly enough, this was not the same as the last time. If the warriors hadn't created a diversion half-way, it would have been difficult to get rid of those bastards. But this time, Shao Xuan noticed that those bats gave up chasing after them after a short while. It seemed that the people in the hunting team were only minor issues in their minds, which was basically nothing.

Presumably, the big bats were slowly gathering together in the hill with that giant pit. All bats in the neighborhood came together gradually.

The good thing was that most of the bats were not smart, and they could only be considered as relatively-dangerous beasts.

Shao Xuan thought about making some big nets that could capture the bats. However, due to a lack of raw materials, he had to give up on that plan.

In the end, the five group leaders decided on a plan that they would use smoke.

There were only less than two hundred warriors if all five hunting groups were combined. However, in that hill with the giant pit, there were thousands of big bats. Moreover, based on the information that their scouts delivered, more and more bats were constantly joining the crew every day.

Well, not every bat was as giant as the one that they encountered inside the giant pit. Many of them were of the same size as the one that attacked Caesar.



It was easy to deal with one bat, but quantity was a serious issue that they had to handle.

Now, the target of the hunting team was to dig out more Fire Crystals and find those missing men. At the same time, they would love to try to avoid face-to-face combat with that bat army. No matter which target their priority was, they had to drive those bats away for some time. To smoke them away was obviously a smart move.

The people in the hunting team would often use some plants to make a smoke for their benefit, such as clearing out bugs and driving away animals. Well, this time, people planned to try to use smoke also.

They needed to carefully select the plants that they would use to make the smoke. They would be messing it up if the smoke they used harmed their teammates instead of hurting those bats.

The group leaders of the five hunting groups compared a few kinds of plants that they used for making the smoke, and selected the best ones.

“Those things are disgusted by that smell a lot. Yesterday, I tossed them a small ball of it, and they ran directly.” Lang Ga said with pride.

Yesterday, Lang Ga encountered a few bats which were hunting. They had almost succeeded, when Lang Ga threw a ball of smoking herbs at them. It landed near the prey, which had already lost its moving ability. It was not able to run or even move anymore. However, a moment earlier, the bats couldn’t wait to enjoy their feast, but once the smoke from the herb ball spread to the near surroundings, they immediately fluttered their wings while screaming. They disliked the smell of the herb ball very much.

“Excellent! Then we will have more chance in succeeding.” Said Mai.

Aside from choosing the right herb to make the smoke, they had to prepare for other herbs and medicines, in case that they got bitten and became paralyzed, or were harmed by the smoke. People could tolerate the smell, but it won’t be comfortable since they would be exposed to that smell for a long time.

Under Shao Xuan’s suggestion, people in the hunting team knit a kind of mask from vines with refreshing effects, so that they could wear them when entering the bat caves. The refreshing smell of the vines would help people stay sober, even in the thick smoke.

“Boss, when will we head out?” Someone asked as they were still in the first holdout. Now, every day, they needed to rob their food from those big bats. Many beasts and other animals had left the territory, and it was hard for warriors to find the right meat. In the meantime, they had to get the food before the bats did.

“Soon.” Said Cheng.

They had prepared the stone tools, the herbs, and other medicines that they would probably need. Now it was time for action.

Shao Xuan sat in a corner, listening to their talk about the coming mission. He

looked at his hand, in which he held a tiny red crystal. It was dug up on their previous trip to the giant pit. There were two pieces of crystals near the surface, and both were not big. One was kept by Cheng, and the other smaller one was in Shao Xuan's possession.

This little Fire Crystal was a little bigger than a rice, and it was much smaller than the first Fire Crystal that he dug up. Because of that, the other group leaders had no problem with Shao Xuan having this one in his possession. In their eyes, what was important were the ones still buried in the giant pit.

Feeling the heat from the palm, Shao Xuan became a bit confused. Mai and the others had said that the energy in Fire Crystals could only be absorbed after it was burnt in the flame. However, ever since he first held a Fire Crystal in his hand, he felt that he absorbed a little energy from it. It was not a lot, but it was obvious. This time, he wanted to make sure, so he asked to keep the smaller piece for himself.

In his sea of consciousness, he could see traces of red "threads" coming together to the totem, and then mixed with the totem. Even though the Fire Crystal was little, it contained far more energy than Shao Xuan had ever anticipated.

If he looked at it with his other view, Shao Xuan could see that the Fire Crystal in his hand was "burning". The red energy from the flame would take a detour in the air, and then drill into his hands, arms, or other parts of his body, before it finally got merged into the totem itself.

.....

Two days later, the five hunting groups began to march.

The work assignments had been made and people had their own task to be in charge of.

Shao Xuan followed Mai and some other warriors to a bat cave. They originally intended to go inside from the crevices in the giant pit, but the proposal was rejected because it was too hard to hide themselves around the giant pit. Moreover, the bats in that giant pit were much larger than elsewhere, and it would be easier for them to detect abnormal smell. Compared with that, the other bat caves in the hill would be a much easier access. Bats in there were

simpler to handle, and the plants nearby offered them bunkers and shelters.

“The stone crevices and other caves in the hill should be connected with one another. Let’s go inside from one of the caves.” Mai spoke to his guys.

Everyone was wearing the face masks made by vines. It was not comfortable, but was quite practical. The mint-like scent of the vines calmed their impatience and anxiety.

After checking the direction of the wind, Mai indicated people to start the action.

Some people were hiding behind bushes and other plants, with grasses on their bodies, while the others approached the cave with smoking herbs.

They all had long thin spears in their hands, all made of wood. Balls of smoking herbs were tied on the spearheads.

They lit them up, and when the fire was burning, they put out the fire to let it smoulder, and thick smoke instantly rose above.

“Shoot!”

The long thin spears were thrown out. Like arrows flying out from the bows, they were shot towards the bat’s cave.

One shot after another, dozens of long spears, with balls of smoke herbs tied at the front, flew into the bat cave within a few breaths.

Soon, thick smoke rose from the bat cave.

They had taken the direction of the wind into consideration when choosing this bat cave. Right now, the wind was blowing inside.

Some of the smoke got out from the cave, while most of the smoke went inside.

Scree, scree, scree~~

Loud screams came out from the cave, and they were heard by Lang Ga and the others.

Seeing that the smoke began to fly out, people knew that that the bats inside were fluttering their wings.

The warriors, that threw the spears before, were ready.

Whoosh, whoosh...

One after another, bats quickly flew out from the cave, and there were hundreds of them in the blink of an eye.

The bats were not happy about being driven out from their caves. Some of them were screaming aloud. They looked around and saw a group of people standing there.

Screee!

Together with the sharp screams, those crazy bats flew towards the warriors that threw the spears earlier.

“Run!!”

The few warriors that did the throwing were the fastest among their peers. They saw the bats coming, and instantly started to run.

Along their direction of escape, there was a grey zone. In the past, Cheng took the hunting group there to show the area. They knew that a group of giant spiders were living in the gray zone. It was not in their hunting route. So normally, they wouldn't be there. However now, they used those giant spiders.

They planned to lure the bats over there, so that they could fight with the giant spiders.

When large batches of bats chased after the people afar, warriors that were hiding behind the bushes came out and entered the cave. Before they went inside, they did not forget to throw more smoking herbs at the entrance of the cave.

Normally, in such a sunny day, with sunlight shining down on the ground, all those bats should be hiding deep inside the caves, resting. However, now it was totally different.

Some bats were already flying outside, while some of them just came out and chased after the warriors. The rest of them flew to the deeper part of the cave, so now there were only a few bats left.

They were not difficult to dealt with. Mai took a torch and put down the bats in the cave easily together with some other warriors. Those bats had big round eyes, but their eyes were not useful in that dark cave. They relied more on their good sense of smell and hearing.

The hunting team warriors wore thick leather shoes. Many warriors were not used to wearing shoes, but they were forced to put them on before the mission.

Thick layers of bat feces were covering the ground, in which there some small

insects crawling around.

Puff!

Lang Ga speared a coming insect into two pieces. Frowning his eyebrows he said, "This place stinks!"

Mai said nothing, but led the others deeper into the cave, with a torch in his hand. When clearing out the bats, they would toss out some balls of smoking herbs.

Just like Mai and his companions, people in the other four hunting groups were entering different bat caves. They hurried in case of unforeseen changes.

All of them marched down quickly as they were putting up with the smelly scent in the cave together with the smoke of the smoking herbs. It was not smooth inside, with stones and rocks lying around everywhere. Some of them were very sharp. If there weren't a torch lighting up the path, they wouldn't have been able to move.

Before, people guessed that the stone crevices were connected to the other bat caves. Well, not for long, they heard the voices from the other hunting groups.

"As expected, they are all connected inside."



---

# Chapter 119 - The Mist

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

When they went inside from different caves, the warriors of the five hunting groups finally got together.

In front of them, there was a very big empty hall. No one could ever see where the ceiling was, and there was a dense mist ahead.

Earlier, they thought that some bats would be driven to this direction by the smoke. However, to their surprise, they hadn't seen a single bat in this open area.

Perhaps they had gone to other caves, but it shouldn't have been so empty in here, going so far as not seeing even a single bat. Why the hell was that? People had no clue what was so special about this place.

"How are things on your side?" Mai asked the other few group leaders.

"It's good. There were not too many bats left in the cave. It was a piece of cake."

"It's the same on our end."

“It looks like most of them have gone outside.”

It was a good sign.

“Something’s coming!” Cha said out of blue.

There were far more than five bat caves outside, and other caves were connected to this place as well.

“Should we put out the fire?”

“No. There’s no point in doing that. Let’s wait. Only two bats are coming.”

Cheng waved to the others.

The faint sounds of fluttering wings were very easy to capture in this quiet hall.

Soon, people heard the sound of the bats flying out from one cave.

Whoosh, whoosh, whoosh!

Although people might not be able to see what these two bats looked like, based on the things they heard, they could spot their locations just the same.

The long spears in Mai and a few other warriors’ hands all flew to the bats once they came out.

After a series of ‘puffs’, those two bats could barely make a sound before they hit the ground.

Cheng asked a few of his men to toss some smoking herbs to the other bat caves, while he stepped forward to check on the bats on the ground and their prey.

Those two bats had so many long spears piercing their bodies, that they looked like cactuses. The cow that they carried also suffered from the spears. It was still alive, but it was unconscious. Just like other prey, instead of being killed, they were only unconscious, and were directly brought in here.

“Judging from their flying route, they should be heading to that direction.”

People looked along the direction that Cheng pointed out, but even with the light of the torches, people couldn't see what was ahead. It was all in the mist.

“Ah-Cheng, do you think that they maybe...” Cha stared at the mist and murmured.

All the prey that were brought in by the bats were delivered to that place. So perhaps, the three missing men from Cheng's hunting group were brought to the same place? Also, one of the purposes for coming to this place was to find out the reason why all those bats were behaving so abnormally. If they could find that out, they would be able to solve the problem once and for all. Or else they would risk being hunted by an army of big bats every time they went to the giant pit for Fire Crystals in the future.

Well, the reason of all the bats acting so abnormally was probably hidden behind the mist, in that direction.

The five group leaders once analyzed the situation when they were having meetings together. They thought that the bats probably were preparing a feast for their leader. Many animals shared similar habits. It was very possible that they were storing food for that. If that was really the case, they would do whatever they could to put down that leader.

Was the leader in here?

Would the army of bats disband naturally once they killed that leader?

“Let's check it out. Be careful!” Cheng said to the crowd.

Once they walked into the mist, the flames of the torches grew smaller.

The visibility was very low, and there was a very unpleasant smell around, just

like a thick fog.

“Miasma?” Shao Xuan wondered.

The pungent odor made them dizzy, but it was not just the odd smell in those bat caves. It was a smell that befuddled people’s minds. Luckily, the fresh smell of the vines eased that feeling.

People put a piece of herb into their mouth, and the herb’s bitter cool taste refreshed them a little.

There was another burst of fluttering wings, and this time, there were more bats coming. The effect of the smoke was limited after all. Dozens of bats flew inside from other caves, all with prey in their claws. Mai and the others were prepared to throw stone spears at them, but to their surprise, they did not attack the hunting groups at all. Even without looking at them, they grabbed their prey and flew directly into the mist.

Somewhere in the mist, there was a sound of something dropping on the ground. Not long after that, those bats flew out from the thick mist and then headed out to the caves.

“Their leader must be in there.” Cheng whispered.

As they walked deeper inside, the flames of their torches grew smaller, as if they were struggling to keep burning. Because of the “mist”, even Mai could only see thing ten meters ahead with a torch in his hand, let alone the others.

“This place is...”

Before Cha could finish his words, he stumbled on something.

His nerves all tightened up in an instant, and he became fully alert for combat. But soon enough, he realized that the thing he kicked had no sign of life.

“Dead?” Cha kicked the object beneath his feet.

The thing he touched was the body of a dead bat. Moreover, it had been dead for quite a long time.

Not only beneath Cha’s feet, in this area covered by thick mist, there were skeletons of bats everywhere on the ground. In other words, there were numerous bats’ bodies everywhere. In some spots, there were layers of bats’ skeletons. It was kind of creepy.

When they walked forward, there were even more bodies of bats piling up like small hills.

Dead bats.

All of them were dead bats.

Moreover, a lot of them died miserably with their remains spread out everywhere. Apparently, they had been cruelly ripped off before they died.

No wonder that those other bats were not fleeing in here. It was literally a giant grave of bats.

“Each one of them was very big in size, and they have been dead for some time...” Said Cheng after he checked on a few lying on the ground nearby.

“It looks like an inside battle, judging from the wounds on their bodies.”

“Why would they fight each other?”

“I remember that some animals must go through a fatal fight if they want to select a leader in their herd.” Said Mai.

“So, you are saying that...”

“The leader is really in here?!”

People instantly became tense. If the bats were alive, none of the five group leaders would ever dare to lead people inside, given the bats' quantity and size. However, if the leader had out-beaten them all, what kind of ferocious beast would that be?

Even so, people had no intention of going back.

In fact, when discussing with Mai and the others, Shao Xuan once proposed that they should go back to the tribe to ask for help from the other hunting team. After all, they were only at the first holdout, which meant it would be much faster to go back to the tribe than going to find the advance group, given that they had merely started the hunting mission. Also, it would be much safer if they had more warriors from the tribe to help.

However, Shao Xuan's proposal was rejected by the others at the meeting. One reason was that the two hunting teams were always competing with one another. All five group leaders did not want people from the other team to join the mission. They would even keep the news from them. Secondly, the more people got involved, the lesser benefit would each one get after the mission was accomplished. No one wanted that.

Shao Xuan's proposal was based on the theory that "where there is life, there's hope", while the others were thinking that they would rather die to find Fire Crystals.

That was the logic of the people in the tribe. Earlier, Mai scolded Shao Xuan with "what could be more important than your life", but later on, everyone became crazy after they heard about the Fire Crystal.

Shao Xuan had underestimated that craziness. So, he realized that these people were really going to risk their lives when he heard the five group leaders talking about the action.

As they were marching forward, they could still hear many bats constantly delivering prey in the air. None of the bats cared about those people standing in the mist. Instead, they were busy with their own business.

Bang!

It was another sound of something dropping on the ground.

The dropping spot was very close to the people of the hunting team.

"Wait a second!!" Said Cheng in a low voice.

"It's the sound of breathing." Mai and a few others also realized that.

There were a lot of breathing sounds nearby.

Aside from the breathing of the totem warriors of the hunting team, and the bats in the air, there were a lot of breath sounds, faint breaths.

Like climbing up a mountain, they stepped on thick layer of bat corpses and moved on.

The light of the torches was already faint. And the flame was only one fifth of its originally size, which led to severe visual impairment. Now, people relied more on their sense of hearing to learn about the things happening in the surrounding.

Some junior warriors couldn't carry on anymore. They had almost reached



their limit. Now, they were barely holding on to keep themselves from fainting. The effect of the vines and herbs were very little. They could not resist the poisonous fog.

“Whoever has difficulty hanging on should stop here first. The others keep moving on.” Said Mai.

The other four groups did the same.

Shao Xuan held the tiny Fire Crystal in his hand, and the energy from it kept him sober. He was able to carry on longer than the other junior totem warriors.

“It’s giant-antler deer!” Someone recognized a living creature on the ground.

“There’s a mountain antelope!”

“A wild boar!”

In the surroundings, there constantly appeared signs of living creatures. All those animals were unconscious. They could never remain conscious in such an environment. Even if they woke up, they would fall unconscious again once they inhaled the thick mist.

Warriors from Cheng's hunting group were thrilled to learn that, for they thought the missing men were probably in here, alive.

In the bat corpse hill, there were a lot other kinds of animals. It was very difficult to find three men.

"Can you see anything, Ah-Xuan?" Mai remembered that Shao Xuan had better night vision than the others, so he asked.

"I cannot see afar, but I'll try my best." Said Shao Xuan.

Shao Xuan could see the surrounding objects when he used his special power, but even so, he felt that there was a layer of fog between him and the objects. It was not clear, and he could only see things in fifty meters. But even just that was much better than the others.

Since all he could see were skeletons, so, he had to identify different animals based on the skeletons.

The others were guarding against unforeseen dangers in the surroundings, while Shao Xuan focused on searching for human skeletons with his special vision.

Most junior totemic warriors had stopped following them, and Shao Xuan was the only young warrior that came so far.

However, people all assumed that it must be because that Shao Xuan had learned from the Shaman. It should be the reason that he could still hang in there.

The energy of the Fire Crystal constantly got absorbed by Shao Xuan's palm, which kept the fading totem in his mind stimulated. However, he was barely maintaining its function.

Shao Xuan guessed that perhaps the Fire Crystal was running out of its energy, so he was absorbing less than before.

The rhythmic sound of breathing was still there, however, Shao Xuan could not find the origin of the sound. In fact, he was the only one that could distinguish the sound from other the breaths.

He glimpsed over a pile of skeletons. And finally, he fixed his eyes on the place where there seemed to be three human skeletons.

“I found them!” Shao Xuan said in a low voice.

Cheng took some men to rush to the place where Shao Xuan pointed, and sure enough, he saw some people lying on the ground. These three men were not far from each other, and they were still breathing.

After they found those three missing men, Shao Xuan still felt uneasy deep down in his heart. He always felt that there was something nearby.

Shao Xuan looked down at his hand that held the Fire Crystal tightly. With only one quick glimpse, he felt a chill on his scalp. All his hairs stood upright, and cold sweat almost seeped into his every bone.

In his hand, the energy lines released by the “burning” Fire Crystal did not all enter into his body as usual. Some of them drifted to the mist, behind him.

---

# Chapter 120 - There Can Only Be One Leader

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

The energy contained in the Fire Crystal in Shao Xuan's hand could only be absorbed by Shao Xuan himself, and it was supposed that the others couldn't absorb any of it. Before at the holdout, Shao Xuan had tried many times.

It was the same with everyone, whether it was junior warriors or intermediate warriors.

So, Shao Xuan had always believed that aside from himself, no other people or object could ever absorb the energy from the Fire Crystal, including the five hunting group leaders and Caesar. Besides, none of them made any reaction indicating that they might have absorbed the energy.

However now, in Shao Xuan's special vision, he saw that some of the red traces of energy, that released from the "burning" Fire Crystal, were floating behind him, instead of being absorbed by his hand.

Who was behind him?

Uncle Mai? Perhaps there was another group leader from another hunting group?

There was more than one warrior. There were actually quite a few of them guarding behind Shao Xuan, so that he could concentrate on searching. However, ...

Shao Xuan turned around, and looked at the direction that the red traces of energy drifted towards.

He saw an object in the shape of a diamond floating in the air. It was about three meters high, and Shao Xuan could not see its skeleton. All he could see was a big shining diamond.

Mai and the others had been keeping an eye on the surroundings, and they had never sensed anything abnormal. They even wondered whether the leader of the bat army was around in the cave or not. Or if it was in some vulnerable phase that it could not come out? It was really lucky that Shao Xuan found the missing three men, and they that they were still alive.

However, Mai and the others suddenly got goosebumps when they saw the look on Shao Xuan's face as he turned around.

Mai reacted quickly and made a sudden turn. Before he could see anything, he tossed out his long spears in full strength, and it went directly towards the direction that Shao Xuan looked at.

The long spear didn't touch anything. It kept flying in the air, and after a while, it hit the stone wall and fell on the ground.

There was nothing. That was the result that Mai and the others got after they turned around.

Shao Xuan looked down on his hand with the Fire Crystal again.

The red lines of energy altered their direction. Almost at the same time that Mai did something, it changed accordingly.

Now, the red lines from the Fire Crystal drifted up.

Mai and the others looked at Shao Xuan. Seeing that he looked up, they looked up as well. This time, none of them rushed into action. They intended to take a look first.

Mai and the others still didn't see anything. At least, there was no object in

the area that they could see.

But it was not the same case with Shao Xuan.

When he looked up, Shao Xuan's pupils shrank when he saw it.

Before, when they walked into the mist, Shao Xuan had paid attention to the ceiling, however, he didn't see anything, he couldn't even see the top. But now, since they were walking on big piles of dead bats, they got closer to the top. Now Shao Xuan could finally see it.

There were a lot of shining diamonds hanging above their head.

And the one he saw earlier was the closest.

They seemed to be floating in the air in Shao Xuan's vision.

That was the reason that those bats were acting abnormally?

If so, there were too many of them!

Not only one. There was not only one of that peculiar thing!

There were at least a hundred of them!!

There was still a little distance from the ceiling. Although it was less than fifty meters, it was still beyond Mai and the others vision in the mist.

While the spear that was tossed out by Mai did not even touch the edge of that thing!

Moreover, these five group leaders couldn't even feel the existence of that thing!

The gap between the two parties was so obvious. If those things decided to attack them, Shao Xuan could only use one word to describe their situation if he had to summarize it – death.

The energy flow of the Fire Crystal was drifting up.

Looking at the red lines floating up, Shao Xuan wanted to stop the Fire Crystal from burning and put it away. However, if he ever did that, no one would ever be able to locate the things above. Even Mai and the other hunting group leaders did not sense its presence, let alone the others.

“Uncle Mai!” Shao Xuan felt it difficult to even speak.

“What on earth did you see, Ah-Xuan?” Mai was not feeling well.

As Shao Xuan was about to answer, there was a slight sound of “crack” above their heads.

Mai and the others were able to hear that as well. Their looks changed immediately. Without caring about anything more, he shouted, “Careful!”

Cheng and some other warriors were checking on the status of their three missing men, but now they rushed to stand alert. However, aside from the sounds that they heard from above, they could not see or hear anything else.



Crack, crack, crack...

It was like some thin shells broke, and the sound continued on.

Shao Xuan saw that the shining diamond broke in the middle.

The breaking shell dropped down and revealed the creature inside.

Shao Xuan could only see its skeleton, which was very much similar with a bat's skeleton. It was not big, but the sense of pressure that it brought was hundreds of times stronger than other big bats.

When the warriors of the hunting groups walked inside the mist, they could see big bats flying inside, and heading out after they dropped their game down. However, don't know since when, but the bats had stopped coming in.

The creature above was still shattering its shell, and it spread its wings in silence. It just floated there without a flutter of the wings!

After it hatched from the egg, it looked down and glimpsed at Shao Xuan.

Shao Xuan felt a chill on his back, as if every hair he had was trembling. He could only see the skeleton and the sharp teeth in its mouth. He could feel that a pair of bloody eyes were staring at him, even though he could not see the actual eyes.

It was only a slight glance, and then it turned over to look at the other "diamonds" that hung there.

They were its own kind.

The next moment, Shao Xuan saw that it opened its mouth, and a few bones in his nose and throat moved in a weird way. It was fast, but very regular.

Originally, people were just standing on the piles of dead bats, but now they felt as if their heads were about to explode. All their senses, including sight and hearing, had all gone in an instant.

Lang Ga and the others directly hit the ground without saying a word.

Blood came out from the intermediate warriors' mouths, noses and ears.

Puff!

After they spit out a mouthful of blood, Mai and the others fell on the ground, one after another.

The flames on the torches all went out, and there was no light in the cave.

Before they fell unconscious, all they saw was torches being put out, and then endless of darkness.

All they thought was the same thing: Why didn't they go back to the tribe for help?

Yes, they would risk their lives for the sake of the Fire Crystal, but it didn't mean that they didn't care if all five hunting groups died at the same time!

Who would then bring the Fire Crystals back to their tribe?

In that scenario, they would become the tribe's sinners instead of accomplishing anything!

The only one holding up was Shao Xuan. In fact, Shao Xuan was dizzy as well. Even with his special view, everything he saw was twisted. The thing that kept him holding on was the Fire Crystal in his hand.

As the fellow above hatched from its egg and came out, it stopped absorbing the energy of that Fire Crystal. So, all the energy of the crystal was used to support Shao Xuan.

Shao Xuan was regretful as well. Would any of these things have happened if he hadn't dug up the Fire Crystal? Or perhaps he should have stopped everybody from jumping into the mission? Should they have gone back to the tribe for help? No, even with the whole tribe's efforts, they might not be able to defeat those things.

There were over a hundred of them...

Bang!

Bang, bang!

There were large sounds of explosions, one after another. Shao Xuan put himself together and looked up.

What the fuck?!

The one that hatched out first was slaughtering its own kind.

All the "diamonds" hanging above began to explode one by one. They were not hatching, they were exploding!

Some "diamonds" already had cracks before that, and some were cracking a moment before. However, all the diamonds got slaughtered instantly. The diamonds directly exploded by sound waves, while those that had already started to hatch were directly torn apart.

The reason that a leader was called a leader was because it was in the leading position in a group.

And one leader was enough for a pack.

Shao Xuan struggled to walk towards Mai and the others, totally ignoring the falling corpses and body parts. He reached out to check their breaths, and was suddenly relieved, finding that they were still breathing. It's good that they were still alive.

Since it was so hard to stand on the feet, Shao Xuan chose to sit down on the piles of dead bats and watched the first hatcher slaughter its own kind in an extremely brutal way. One of them was bitten off by the head and dropped in front of Shao Xuan.

Due to a lack of torch, Shao Xuan could not use his normal vision to see the world. All he could see was the skeleton that dropped in front of him.

He touched it, and felt the fur on its body. The muscle was very tight, and its wings were like shields.

If they had managed to live, this herd might have become the top lord of the forest. However, there was only one leader, and the others were doomed to tragedy. They were meant to be the stepping stones for the leader.

No wonder that the bats in the caves were no longer coming to this place. Now, with the things above fighting against each other, no other bat dared to come close to watch. Death would be their only fate if they came inside.

Numerous dead bats piled up high, and every one of them were the strongest of their pack. However, after a brutal fight, there were only hundreds of them that survived. Then, after some kind of special mutation that Shao Xuan was not able to understand, they transformed from powerful animals into top ferocious beasts.

After that, through a selection of brutal fighting, the solo winner would be the strongest one. For example, the one that was busy slaughtering its kind.

Just one small step ahead, and it was every step ahead.

Although there were still a lot of diamond that did not crack, they could move

somehow. It was impossible for that one to slaughter them all at once.

The massacre lasted for about half an hour. Shao Xuan just sat there, watching, for about half an hour. Now, he was unable to get up on his feet, he couldn't even keep balance. All he could do was remain seated on the ground.

When the massacre stopped, the sound waves finally ended. Shao Xuan felt that his mind was feeling less swollen up, and his vision was nopt twisted anymore.

Feeling something abnormal, Shao Xuan looked up.

Only half a meter away from him, there was a complete skeleton standing in front of him. Shao Xuan could even smell its blood clearly.

Shao Xuan looked at it right in the eyes for a few seconds. Just as Shao Xuan wondered whether it was going to kill the humans after it massacred its own kind, he saw the alpha bat bite on the headless corpse beside him. Quickly it loosened its bite, and walked to some other direction as it looked away.

It had the same folded forelimb-wings and strong back limbs. However, when it walked, it was very much lighter than the others. Even when he was in front of Shao Xuan, Shao Xuan didn't hear any sounds of footsteps.

The alpha bat walked around that battle field, and everywhere it went, it would bite the bats that he killed earlier, as well as the other livestock that the bats brought back.

However, oddly enough, it avoided the people of the hunting team.

When that alpha bat walked away, Shao Xuan reached out and touched that headless body, and realized that it was sucked dry.

It didn't look big in size, but it apparently had an astonishing appetite. Also, it was a very fast eater. The other bats would mostly just lick the blood, while the alpha bat took a casual bite and sucked up all the blood in the prey's body. The poor prey basically turned from unconscious to dead in the blink of an eye.

Almost all the food delivered by the bats in the caves and stone crevices got bitten by the alpha bat, except for the humans of the hunting team.

Looking at it feed, Shao Xuan had a feeling that this one champion from the

mountains of dead bodies despised those warriors as food.

---

# Chapter 121 - The Bat's Mountain

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

After it was properly fed, it flew up to the ceiling, and soon disappeared from Shao Xuan's vision.

At the mountaintop, above the giant pit.

A black shadow silently slipped out from a stone crevice on the wall of the giant pit.

It was shining brightly outside.

Under the bright sunlight, that black shadow flew straight up into the sky, it became difficult to see.

If Shao Xuan had seen it, he would find that its nose bones and a few other bones in the throat were opening and closing quickly, and it created sound waves that even intermediate warriors couldn't hear.

But, hearing those faint sounds that were impossible to hear, the big bats from different areas of the forests flew up high, one after another.

No matter what those bats were doing earlier, they all stopped, whether they



were hunting, dining, or chasing after the warriors that had thrown those smoke herb balls before; they flew up high without any hesitation, and headed towards the giant pit.

In the gray zone that was filled with giant spiders and their nets, the hidden warriors noticed that the army of bats that chased after them suddenly all turned around. Even those that got caught in the spider webs were struggling like crazy. After they chewed down the webs and finally got free, they flew up high towards the direction of the giant pit.

“What’s ... wrong with them?” One warrior asked another while breathing heavily.

“The direction that they are flying to is...”

“Over the other side of the hill!”

“Something happened on the bosses’ side?!”

“Let’s go over there quickly!”

All the warriors whistled to make their whereabouts known to each other.

All those that were messing around with the bats started rushing towards the bat caves.

When they left the forest and there were no dense branches blocking their view, instantly they saw that there was a dark cloud of bats hovering above the giant pit. Moreover, the dark cloud was growing.

No matter whether they were near or came from afar, almost every bat flew towards the giant pit and joined that piece of “dark cloud”.

Inside the cave, Shao Xuan recovered some of his strength.

It was not a good time for them to stay inside, for all the others would fall unconscious again, even if they managed to sober up for some time.

Shao Xuan carried all the warriors sleeping on the piles of dead bats out of the mist zone.

When he finished carrying them out from the mist, Shao Xuan gave every one of them some herbs to chew in the mouth.

Inside the cave, there was no living bat remaining.

After taking some time to rest, Shao Xuan heard something from outside. The group of warriors that drew the attention of the first batch of bats had arrived.

Seeing the people lying on the ground silently, the ones that came were all stunned. However, they became relieved after they checked everyone's status.

"What's going on outside?" Asked Shao Xuan.

"All those bats that chased after us made a sudden turn and flew towards the top of the hill... The ones inside the cave...well, I mean those bats you talked about, were all gone as well. They all gathered above the giant pit." Said a warrior.

"We should probably get out of here right now, and talk about things later."

Indeed. Shao Xuan couldn't agree more. If those bats out there returned, none of them would ever be able to escape.

Shao Xuan only got the chance to look at the sky after they had carried all the unconscious people outside the cave.

At that time, the "dark cloud" above had become quite big already, the sky surrounding it was getting dark as well. Shao Xuan stood there, but he could not feel even a trace of sunlight.

Turning around to look at the other places, Shao Xuan found that there were dark stains on other parts below the hill. And they were growing as well, because more bats from afar were making their way over to this hill constantly.

"What are they trying to do?"

"I have no idea."

Seeing their scale in numbers, those who were sober all felt that their earlier plan was too bold. They only had a total of around 150 warriors. And the things in the sky, well...

It was horrifying seeing so many of them gathering together. Were all the bats in the region and surroundings coming over?

As he was focusing on the sky, suddenly Shao Xuan heard something. He looked over and saw Caesar running towards him.

Before, when the five hunting groups started their missions, Shao Xuan kept Caesar out of the plan. Also, Caesar was no fan of the smell of the herbs. He was told to wait in the holdout with another few wounded warriors.

However unexpectedly, Caesar ran over towards him!

“What is it doing here?”

“Did something happen in our holdout?”

A few warriors beside him asked nervously.

“No, Caesar was only worried about what was happening here.” Said Shao Xuan.

Caesar was originally waiting in the cave of their holdout, however, all of a sudden he heard the voice of the alpha bat. He rushed out and tracked Shao Xuan down to this place according to the smell.

Shao Xuan told Caesar to wait aside after he rubbed on his head.

In the air, that piece of “dark cloud” had expanded to its limit, and there were no more additional bats joining the crew. After they had collected every bat, the pack flew towards some direction.

“Over there...”

Shao Xuan looked over there. In the distance, in that direction, there was a very tall mountain. It was taller than every other mountain nearby, surrounded by clouds and mist, with a snow covered top.

“I remember that there were a lot of holes and caves in that mountain.”

“Yes. I once followed the boss to that mountain. But there were a lot of cave bears and other ferocious beasts living in the holes. So boss forbade us from getting near to that place.

Someone from Cheng’s hunting group shared his knowledge of that mountain with the other companions.

Now, that giant piece of dark cloud formed by bats was heading towards the top of that mountain.

Were they going rob the place for later use of their own?

“It's possible, but a brutal combat will be unavoidable.

“Who do you think will win?”

“I don’t know. But I don’t wish for the bats to win, or else how would we go hunting in the future?” Someone from Cheng’s team was worried.

The other warriors in the other hunting groups tapped on each others’ shoulders with sympathy. It was truly a disaster for the animals in that mountain to encounter that pack of monsters. If it were not for the Fire Crystals, they would never mess with that bunch of monsters.

Since the batch of bats had left, the remaining warriors discussed and decided to take their unconscious teammates back to the holdout first.

Probably, mostly because of the bats, they did not encounter any ferocious beasts, or even normal animals, on their way back to the cave.

One day later, those unconscious gradually woke up. Mai and the other group leaders were the first ones to wake up. However, they still felt dizzy after they

woke up. It took them yet another day to recover.

Shao Xuan told them that the first hatched bat slaughtered all the others without the slightest sign of mercy, it became the alpha bat, and led the giant army of bats to fight over the other high mountain. The five group leaders instantly got very excited, they instantly wanted to check the current situation over there.

The bat army experienced quite a lot casualties during the combat since the alpha bat started the war, but in the end of the day, they won. They had kicked out and swept away many other creatures that had been living in those caves. When Mai and the others went over there, they saw some corpses of cave bears.

That huge amount of cave bears also got driven away from their homes. Those cave bears that managed to remain alive did not dare to set foot in that region again.

Although the current situation probably meant that they needed to deal with those bats in the future, all five hunting group leaders were thrilled to learn about the fact that these bats robbed another new place, which meant that they won't be coming back to the original hill.

Which meant that now they would be free to go there, and start digging in any way that they wanted!!

This fact made the five group leaders so happy that forget that they had not fully recovered yet, and they quickly ordered their people to get ready to dig.

Over the giant pit, things became much quieter with the absence of those bats.

The five group leaders first got rid of the thick layers of bat poop. Then, Shao Xuan marked all the spots where he sensed the Fire Crystals. The closer the Fire Crystal was lying to the surface, the smaller the circle would be. After he was finished, the others instantly began to dig.

There were seventeen circles at the bottom of the giant pit, in other words, that meant that they would be able to dig out at least seventeen more Fire Crystals, big or small. It would be a huge gain if they could just dig them up.

“I didn’t expect to be still breathing now.” Cheng said.

“Neither did I.” Mai smiled bitterly. This time, they completely survived by luck. It was so fortunate that the alpha bat chose not to suck them up.

“I wonder if that alpha bat will become a king bat in the future.” Said Cha.

There were alpha leaders in many herds and packs of different animals, however, a king beast was rarely seen. Whoever could be addressed as a king something, it must definitely be the strongest one of its kind. It was a title of the whole species, instead of just a group of them.

“I think it’s possible. It really is. By then, we may not have the ability to fight back. I have been hunting outside for so many years, but this is the first time that I have encountered something like that.”

“Someday, in the future, if that beast does become a king bat, I will propose a request to the Shaman to change the hunting route.” Said Cheng.

The place with a king beast living inside would definitely become a forbidden place for sure. The king stone worm was an unusual exception, because no stone worm, big or small, old or young, would ever attack humans on purpose. However, it is totally different with those bats.

No matter whether that alpha bat has the chance of becoming a king beast of its kind, and no matter how long it would take for the thing to become a king beast, the five leaders made a joint decision, which was that they would stay as far away as possible from that mountain! They would never mess around with them ever again!!

When Mai and the others had been brought out from the bat caves, the mist zone became more toxic. It was probably because there were more bodies buried inside. Since no one ever re-entered the toxic mist zone, none of them had the chance to learn about what had happened since they left.

Shao Xuan did not share the whole story with Mai and the others, he kept something to himself. For example, the Fire Crystal, the alpha bat had absorbed some energy of that tiny Fire Crystal, and had sucked up every living thing, but

just left the warriors out.

That was something that Shao Xuan could tell the Shaman, but the Shaman would be the only one that he tells these things to.

Shao Xuan was having a headache, for he was thinking hard about what he should tell the Shaman after they got back. Shao Xuan looked at his palm and wondered.

After five days, all the Fire Crystals that Shao Xuan had marked got dug up.

Looking at the small bag of Fire Crystals, all five group leaders had tears in their eyes. They almost all died for the sake of those Fire Crystals.

They used the best animal skin bag to store the Fire Crystals, and even the ones that were held on to by Mai and Cheng were tossed inside the bag.

“Ah-Xuan, where’s your piece of Fire Crystal? Come, let’s put them together and wrap them up well. After we get back to the tribe, we’ll make good use of them.” Said Mai.

“...It’s...gone...” Said Shao Xuan. That little Fire Crystal had been fully absorbed by him, and after it released all the energy it contained, it turned into white powder. However, that was something that Shao Xuan couldn’t share with everyone.

“Did you lose it?” The five group leaders hesitated and looked at him.

After they confirmed that Shao Xuan really did not have it, and was not trying to keep it to himself, all five people felt it was a giant pity. But, to be honest, Shao Xuan indeed carried them out from the mist one by one, and at this time, none of the leaders felt it appropriate to blame him. This time, Shao Xuan would still take most of the credits for this mission. Oh right, Caesar was also very brave, and he had contributed a lot as well.

Like the other young warriors resting from their wounds, Mao was not allowed to participate in the digging of the Fire Crystals. Instead, he was just watching from the edge of the giant pit.

When the five group leaders had stored the small bag of Fire Crystals carefully in an animal skin bag, they happily discussed about how to tell the Shaman this



wonderful news. In the meantime, Mao was just curious what his dad was going to think when he learned about the Fire Crystal thing after all the hunting groups got together again. The expression on his face would be pretty interesting.

However, at that moment, Ta suddenly sneezed as he was leading some people in the green land. Somehow, he was having a strange feeling lately... What's that about?

---

# Chapter 122 - I Absorbed It

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

Since the warriors spent most of their time digging up Fire Crystals and dealing with the giant bats, they did not do much hunting during this trip. Aside from hunting for the food they needed, basically no one had been hunting for storage in the five hunting groups.

With the approaching of the convening day, there were only a few days left that they could go hunting. However, the five group leaders almost spent every moment together, guarding that small bag of Fire Crystals.

As for the game that they should be bringing back. All five group leaders would tell you aloud, that they did not have time to care about those minor things!

Finally, the convening day came.

Ta had led the advance group deep into the green land, and they had a nice harvest. Aside from all the prey and meat, they had found a rare flat-tailed plant as well. Gui He's hunting team also brought back a lot of things from the first hunting mission this year, and Ta hated to lose to them. Luckily, they had

fortune on their side.

However, Ta was indeed a little concerned, about what might have happened with Mai's hunting group. After all, he brought a wolf along with his group.

This time, they were going back sooner than expected. He was prepared to wait for another two or three days before every hunting group in his team gathered together. However, unexpectedly, the five hunting groups arrived together.

That was a scenario that had never happened in the past. Hunting groups would only ask for help from other hunting groups when they encountered a major crisis. But judging from the vigorous steps of the groups, they shouldn't have been into any fatal dangers, although there were indeed a lot of wounded people.

Looking at the wolf, Ta assumed that it was getting along well with the other warriors.

After seeing that they were generally in good health, Ta again felt it hard to breathe when he found that they had so little game with them.

"What is wrong?" Ta asked in a bad mood.

The five group leaders stood there together, showing their big white teeth to Ta together, smiling...like idiots...

.....

Inside the tribe.

Old Ke hadn't been sleeping very well lately, especially around the time that the hunting team was about to return. Every day, he would take a few walks around the Path of Glory.

He wondered whether Ah-Xuan was doing okay, and whether Caesar was behaving well. After all, it was Caesar's first time travelling outside. Would he be okay with so many ferocious beasts nearby?

As he let his mind drift, Old Ke heard an eagle cry from the air. Looking at Chacha in the sky, Old Ke stopped walking.

Had the hunting team returned?!

Without any hesitation, Old Ke quickly walked towards the Path of Glory. By the time he arrived, there were already some people waiting along the road.

“I heard that many people got badly injured this time.”

“From which hunting group?”

“I do not know.”

“.....”

Old Ke did not have a good feeling about it. Perhaps, were they talking about Mai's hunting group? Someone had predicted that Mai and his hunting group would meet some serious trouble when they took the wolf along at the beginning.

Some other guys mentioned Caesar's name while discussing, but they were not talking about Caesar's merits. Old Ke almost got into a fight because of that.

Soon, the badly injured people got sent back, and there were indeed quite a lot of them.

After about another half a day, the hunting team showed up.

"Aside from the advance group, the other hunting groups seem to have little game..." Someone said.

It was hard for people to believe that they brought back so little game!

"What the hell happened?"

As people were whispering, warriors from the other hunting team were also thinking about something secretly. Indeed, they were the stronger team! Compared with their harvest, Ta's hunting team was merely a sad joke.

No one had ever anticipated that there would be such a big difference in the game that they brought back. In the past, Ta's hunting team would always bring back packs of dead animals and meat. Even at their worst times, they would bring back more.

Well, forget it. It is good enough that they came back alive.

It was their first hunting trip this year, and many families had pretty high expectations towards their return. Now, they couldn't help but feel somewhat disappointed. The winter had ended, but it seemed that they were still going to suffer from hunger for quite some time. They did not have enough food.

Although disappointed, people still decided to properly comfort the returning warriors. However, after they finally managed to control their emotions and prepared their nice words, they found that every warrior on the Path of Glory

was smiling like champions, without any sign of being upset. They waved their fists to their families standing on the sides of the path, not bringing back much game, and wearing giant dumb smiles.

People had to swallow all the comforting words that they had already prepared.

“What is wrong with them?”

“Was the blow of such a pitiful result of hunting too much for them?”

People had no clue why they were acting like that.

Old Ke finally became relieved seeing that both Shao Xuan and Caesar were alright. It really didn't matter whether they had a good harvest. The most important thing was that they came back, safe and sound.

However, Old Ke noticed that the team leader, Ta, who was walking at the very front of the line, had a very delicate expression...It was faint. If you said that he was happy, he wasn't too happy. Yet he was also not upset.

What on earth happened?

When they finished the sword cleansing ritual at the mountaintop, they all rushed down the mountain like crazy. Some warriors even forgot to take their game back.

Soon, people learnt the reason why the hunting team was acting so weirdly.

“The Fire Crystals?!!”

Old Ke was very excited, and he only believed that Shao Xuan was telling the truth after hearing it several times.

Not only Old Ke, similar things were happening to many different families in the tribe. Some older guys in the tribe even passed out due to this exciting news.

The bad outcome of a hunting mission?

No problem at all! Because the Fire Crystals would be their biggest harvest!

No stored food back at their homes?

No problem, cause there was still plenty of fish in the river down there. Nobody was going to die of eating fish for twenty days or so.

What? You say that fish contained too little energy?

Well, you have the Fire Crystals!

The Shaman had said that anyone who was a part of this had his own merits. All their close families and relatives could all benefit from the Fire Crystals.”

This time, the whole tribe got excited. When they had a family member or a relative in Ta’s hunting team, they went to hang out with him. When there was no relative, they tried to find one!

This was such a rare and precious opportunity!

It was said that this time they had found many Fire Crystals!

Although Shao Xuan had a major contribution in this whole thing, aside from Old Ke, Shao Xuan indeed had no family or relatives in the tribe. The Shaman deliberately gave him some extra spots, so that he could bring some friends that he was not related to.

Old Ke, Ge, and some other guys that once had helped Shao Xuan out, had been brought up to the mountaintop, as well as Tu and Jie Ba from the orphan cave, that had just awakened this year.

It was a pity that the energy could only be absorbed by those who had awakened. So there were some that Shao Xuan wanted to help out, yet couldn’t.



On that day, every extra was thrilled to have been taken along to the mountaintop, while the others who didn't have the chance were mostly from the other hunting team. They were super jealous, and their eyes turned red to some extent.

A few Fire Crystals were placed near the Flame, and when the Shaman finished reading the spell, the flame grew bigger and bigger, gradually swallowing the nearby Fire Crystals.

Unlike the first time that Shao Xuan absorbed the energy by his own. This time, everyone could see the red energy lines rising above while the Fire Crystals kept burning by the Flame.

Many red energy lines rose up from the Flame and got absorbed by the people standing around the fire pit.

Although it was accomplished by just the five joint hunting groups, it was impossible for the advance group to be left out of this. After all, they were the ones that looked for herbs and medicines for everyone. All the herb packs used by the wounded people were brought back by the advance group. As a result, there were people from the advance group that stood beside the fire pit. However, they were a little embarrassed and awkward, enjoying the privilege. Ta, of all people, was the one with the most complex feelings.

It was that lad again!

That was Ta's first thought when he learnt about it.

Although the Fire Crystals they brought back didn't look like a lot, not all of them were used. The ones that got burnt were already enough for the people standing by the fire pit to absorb. More Fire Crystals would just go to waste.

So the remaining Fire Crystals were stored and kept by the Shaman, to reward by merit. Do you want to absorb a Fire Crystal? Sure, do something meritorious, and the Shaman will reward you with it.

The Shaman himself praised and acknowledged Caesar, and he promised that the patterned plate he gave Caesar would belong to the wolf forever. Which meant that the wolf would be allowed to live in the tribe his whole life, without anyone intending to harm him, and the only reason for a sudden death would be being killed during a hunting mission.

That was the gesture and attitude that the Shaman showed.

With Caesar's example, the others were even thinking about keeping their own cub in the future.

Two days after they absorbed the energy from the Fire Crystals, quite a few junior totem warriors advanced and became intermediate warriors. Lang Ga and Ang were both part of them. They had made essential improvements, and the totem patterns on their arms had extended past the elbows.

That made Lang Ga so thrilled that he partied alone in his house for days. He even threw out his grandpa's favorite precious stone hammer out of excitement.

In the past, Tuo and Keke were the only two well-known outstanding young warriors when Lang Ga awakened together with them. Last year, Tuo and Keke became intermediate warriors.

But now, to Lang Ga's surprise, he was also able to make such fast progress in such a short time!

The topic of Fire Crystals would last for a long time in the tribe due to the limited size of the community. In the open wild, their tribe was the only tribe, and people had few stories to hang on to. So, in short terms, people wouldn't be talking about anything else, at least not in the foreseeable future.

Every time when you went out the door, you would hear people discussing something related to the Fire Crystals. For instance, which warrior advanced after absorbing the Fire Crystals, who had the least improvement, and who did not manage to go up to the mountaintop, etc... aside from all that, Shao Xuan and the wolf were also the center of people's discussion.

“I heard that it was the wolf that found the place with the Fire Crystals?”

“How I envy that! Will our hunting team be able to find Fire Crystals if we also had a wolf? Even if not Fire Crystals, it would also be good enough to have found something else.”

“How about we go and catch a few cubs during our hunting trip this time? Ah-Xuan seemed to have said that it was better to train a cub from young age, right? Anyway, wolf packs often fight each other in the wild, and it’s a shame that all those cubs have to die. They won’t cost too much food if we bring them back and keep them at home.

“That make sense.”

Shao Xuan did not anticipate that only one hunting trip would make people think about keeping their own wolf.

After the Fire Crystal incident, Shao Xuan was asked to go to the Shaman for a talk.

The Shaman asked some details about this matter. For example, why did Shao Xuan manage to sense the locations of the Fire Crystals.

Even if he had more power of inheritance than the others, it would not guarantee that he could locate those Fire Crystals so precisely. He might be able to fool the others, but the Shaman already knew better.

At the beginning, Shao Xuan and the Shaman were just taking baby steps in their relationship. However, during this process, both parties began to have more trust in each other, and they revealed more information to each other gradually.

The Shaman let Shao Xuan know of things that even the leaders might not know, while Shao Xuan did not keep his secret to the Shaman about being different from the others.

Here, there was only one tribe, and the Shaman represented absolute power and authority. If he was someone selfish and stupid, he might have thought that Shao Xuan was a threat to his position, and he might have tried to get him out of the way. However, the truth was that the Shaman was happy and delighted every time he saw anything great with Shao Xuan. He would put on his rarely-

seen gentle smile when he learnt that Shao Xuan had some other ability.

Shao Xuan had no intention of keeping it from the Shaman this time. He pointed at his eyebrows and said, "The totem told me so."

"Is it true that you lost the little Fire Crystal that you were holding on to?" Asked the Shaman. He was not trying to blame him, and it was just a question out of pure curiosity. He did not think that Shao Xuan would lose something so important easily. Besides, since he could sense the existence of the Fire Crystals, why would he not notice it when he lost it?

"I did not say that I lost it. All I said was that the Fire Crystal...is gone." Shao Xuan lifted his hand and said to the Shaman, "I absorbed it."

---

# Chapter 123 - The Secret Engraving Technique

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

The Shaman had sudden twitches on his face, as if not believing Shao Xuan's words. However, judging from Shao Xuan's expressions, he didn't seem to be lying lying.

"Wait a second."

The Shaman turned around and took out a piece of Fire Crystal and passed it to Shao Xuan, "Show me."

Shao Xuan did not say anything more, and began to absorb it right away after he took the Fire Crystal.

Although the others were unable to see Shao Xuan absorbing energy from the Fire Crystal, the Shaman could somewhat see it. It was not clear, but the energy lines were a hundred percent real!!

How was that even possible?!

The Shaman was totally befuddled.

The reason that Shao Xuan shared this experience with the Shaman was that he wanted to seek for the answers to his confusion. He did not know everything about the mysterious power in his body. However, it seemed that the Shaman did not know as well.

Seeing that the Shaman fell into deep thoughts again, Shao Xuan placed the Fire Crystal on the stone desk in front of the Shaman.

Shao Xuan's move called the Shaman back to reality. He looked at this quail-egg-sized Fire Crystal, and then turned to Shao Xuan again. He was looking for some traces of reluctance, unwillingness, upset or greed. After all, most of the credit belonged to Shao Xuan in this matter. If he awarded people according to their contributions, Shao Xuan should be the one that should have gained the most awards. However, Shao Xuan had actually not gained that much.

But the Shaman noticed that Shao Xuan's eyes were quite tranquil, and there was absolutely no reluctance or greed in his mind. Nor did he have any dissatisfaction towards the distribution of the Fire Crystals.

Such a kind and noble heart!

Even the Shaman was touched. Ah-Xuan was making sacrifices for the sake of the tribe!

"You may take this Fire Crystal." Said the Shaman.

"No need." Seeing some guilt on the Shaman's face, Shao Xuan said, "Or we can change to a smaller one. This one is too big, and it would be a real loss if I do lose it."

A rice-sized Fire Crystal would be able to last for days, and it was indeed unnecessary to have such a big piece. Moreover, he would not be using it while he is in the tribe. Only during hunting missions would it be used, so there was no need for such a big piece.

The Shaman felt that this young lad was really a noble soul, who had no personal ambition, and whose every efforts were for the sake of the tribe. Thinking about that, the Shaman said in an even nicer way, "You should take it."

"Alright, then." Shao Xuan took back that quail-egg-sized Fire Crystal and said, "In fact, the Fire Crystal does not have so much impact on me, I cannot improve

my strength even if I absorb the energy.”

The Shaman: “...”

Shao Xuan did not lie, for the changes brought by the Fire Crystals were not as significant as what the others had. All the other warriors would have obvious improvements after they absorbed the energy from the Fire Crystals. However, the Fire Crystals did not have such a significant effect on Shao Xuan, besides for the rapid recovery and raising the spirit.

Shao Xuan had absorbed more than half of the energy of the small piece of Fire Crystal that he tested on. This time, he again, absorbed quite a lot of energy when he was standing beside the fire pit with the other warriors. In fact, he had absorbed even more energy than the others. However, the totem patterns on his arms did not extend.

When the Shaman left, Shao Xuan had a few more animal skin rolls in his hands. They were empty Shaman Volume skin rolls.

After hearing about the issue of the Fire Crystals, the Shaman shared some ancient volumes with Shao Xuan, which were painted by former Shamans. Among them, there was this one about hounds.



The Shaman was just like that. He would reveal more information and help you as long as you showed him that you are worth it. He would do anything that would be good to the tribe.

If before, the Shaman would probably not have shown Shao Xuan the ancient volumes, for they were a few secrets of the tribe hidden in them. Moreover, the Shaman would rather not reveal the secrets before the time was right. However now, the Shaman changed his mind.

All the ancient volumes drawn by the ancestors were kept by the Shaman. It had been over a thousand years, and there was some damage. One could only read those volumes at the Shaman's place, and none of them could be taken out.

First, Shao Xuan roughly went through all those ancient volumes. Then, he picked out those ones about the hounds and began to carefully read them, picture by picture.

When he returned home in the mountain foot area, he locked himself up in his room, and started to copy the things he saw on the ancient volumes with his pen.

Back then, when he was still living in the orphan cave, he had seen wall pictures in that stone room, showing that warriors hunted with hounds. However, he did not have any clear image at that time. After all, it was a brand new world to him, and anything that seemed normal could have a lot of unpredictable secrets buried within.

Well, after reading those ancient volumes, Shao Xuan learnt that the ancestors had different demands and requirements for different kinds of hounds.

According to the pictures in the ancient volumes, the ancestors would pick out a batch of strong, energetic cubs when the hounds were still very young. They would train them strictly, and during the process some cubs might not survive. The ones that lived through that training process would enter the second round of selection.

There were two kinds of hounds that the ancestors kept, which were normal hounds and accompanying hounds. The normal hounds were the ones that had been trained. They would attend the hunting missions or join in the guard missions. However, none of them had been truly recognized by the tribe, for they had not inherited the real power.

However, the accompanying hounds were not the same. Every hound was carefully selected, with strong ability and considerable loyalty. They had been recognized by the whole tribe, and would be engraved with the tribe's totem by the Shaman. After that, they would become a part of the tribe who could stand by the fire pit during ritual ceremonies, and obtain totem power from the flame, like everybody else. Hence, they would be much stronger than normal hounds.

However, such engraving was not hereditary, the offspring of accompanying hounds must be trained and selected like the other normal hounds. They could only be acknowledged after training and selection based on the same standards. But generally speaking, the offspring of accompanying hounds was mostly excellent in many ways.

As for the secret technique of engraving...only the Shaman of the tribe was able to do that, for it required the power of inheritance.

The Shaman had told Shao Xuan when he was reading the ancient volumes that if Shao Xuan wanted to try, he would find all the related ancient volumes. After all, based on the current situation, Caesar had met all the requirements to be engraved.

“The secret technique of engraving is very complicated, and can not be mastered in a short period of time.”

Was what the Shaman had said when Shao Xuan left.

In fact, Shao Xuan completely understood the Shaman's meaning. He didn't want Shao Xuan to rush into this. If he tried to do the engraving without fully understanding and mastering the technique, not only would the engraving fail, Caesar might even die from it. It had been said on the Shaman volume that there was a success rate in doing the engraving. Only half of the hounds would survive.

The risk could not be ignored.

Even the Shaman had never tried the secret technique of engraving. After all, there was no animal in the tribe on which the Shaman could test on.

Shao Xuan needed to think carefully about what to do. He would be the one to make the choice and the decision. Which meant that the Shaman wouldn't interfere with it.

Since there was such a high risk, of course Shao Xuan won't rush into anything. He would first completely understand and master every step of the way.

Looking at Caesar, who was yawning beside his feet, Shao Xuan sighed deeply inside. Caesar was just a wild beast and was still far from being a ferocious beast. In the forest, he could not compete with an alpha wolf, which was determined by nature, not Caesar himself. It would take a long time for him to transform from a normal animal into a ferocious beast. Just like those bats in the cave, every ferocious beast turned into one when it stepped on thousands of the other animals' corpses.

Under such an environment, normal animals wouldn't be able to survive long in the forests. Even people in the tribe must try hard to improve themselves.

No matter human or animal, they were all trying hard to improve and climb up on nature's pyramid. For each and every step on the way, they left behind thousands of bodies.

“Well, I’ll just make baby steps first.” Shao Xuan whispered to himself as he stared at this lazy yawning wolf.

Everyday, Shao Xuan would read the ancient volumes at the Shaman’s place, and then copy them on his new animal skin rolls. He worked on them with full concentration, and circulated his power of inheritance accordingly as practice.

The Shaman also kept his promise, and found out all the related volumes about engraving and hounds.

Aside from when he was out in a hunting mission, Shao Xuan would continue his copy work while he was in the tribe.

In Shao Xuan’s room, there were already over ten animal skin rolls that he had finished. That was his hard work of all those days.

While Shao Xuan was copying those ancient volumes, many people in the tribe came to him.

Since people in the tribe started to think about keeping their own wolves, some people from the hunting teams would come to consult Shao Xuan after a hunting mission.

For example, Mo-er was here to talk to Shao Xuan.

He wanted to ask about ways to train and keep an animal. Since everyone else had absolutely no experience in keeping an animal at home. It seemed easy, but in fact, it was not. Many people were not able to keep the animals alive, and they would just eat the meat if their pets died.

Shao Xuan looked at the whelp that Mo-er held in his hand, and lifted his eyebrows.

“A cave lion?”

That was something very difficult to find. The cave lion was very fierce and savage. Most cave lion would grow into ferocious beasts. Even wolf packs dared not to mess with them. However, he had no idea what the whelp would be like.

According to Mo-er, they found a group of cave bears fighting against cave

lions, and the cave lions lost. Almost every whelp of the cave lions were bitten to death, except for this little one. Mo-er brought it back, he wanted to keep it for himself.

Shao Xuan literally had no experience in keeping a cave lion at home. Since the very beginning, he kept Caesar like a dog. However, Caesar still had his wild side. The lucky thing was that, in the end, Caesar managed to keep his wild nature under control. As for Mo-er's cave lion... All Shao Xuan could do was to share some basic do's and don't's with him. Later on, it would be completely up to Mo-er.

One must pay full attention to it if you wanted to keep some fierce animal, and not let them go out of control. If any abnormal circumstances came up, people in the tribe would put it down first.

Even though it was not easy keeping an animal, many people wanted to try.

Not only Mo-er, many other warriors brought back wolf cubs during the later hunting missions. Altogether, they brought back some other animals as well.

Some warriors were so excited keeping an animal at first, but later on, their pets finally became meat and ended up in their bellies. However, some of the warriors held on to their original goal, among which, most of them were young warriors like Mo-er.

During wintertime, Shao Xuan demonstrated the flying ability of flying birds like Chacha. In the beginning of this new year, he made Caesar step into the front, and hence was recognized by everyone in the tribe. By doing that, he made the young warriors in the tribe find new ways to do things.

Now, Shao Xuan was the first and only one that kept an animal and had gained the Shaman's recognition. So every time when people brought back something, they would delightfully come to Shao Xuan and chat about it.

Especially Mao. When the others were focusing on wolves, tigers, leopards, and lions, that lad brought back a baby boar! It was totally understandable that warriors in the tribe worshiped ferocious carnivores, but a wild boar...

To be honest, that was not really a wild boar... It was more like a suckling pig!

---

# Chapter 124 - The Cubs in the Tribe

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

During the hunting time, Mao saw those creatures with four fangs, and considered them as animals similar to wild boars and ferocious beasts.

Having seen several wild boars with four fangs, he finally caught a cub and brought it back to the tribe, only to be told that it was not a wild boar but a regular animal. With four fangs, this kind of beast looked like a wild boar, but didn't have the thick fur or looked aggressive.

Mao originally thought it was a cub of the ferocious beast but it turned out to be just a regular beast.

Though Mao was disappointed after knowing this, he did not kill the cub and eat it, but kept it. He even deliberately went down from the mountain to ask Shao Xuan for advice on how to raise it.

Many people secretly laughed at Mao, because as the grandson of the chief, and the son of a team leader, he raised such a creature, while the other people raised wolves or leopards.

Mao named it "Si Ya" (literally four fangs), which looked like a babirusa. That

was probably because he failed to find a ferocious beast with four fangs. Fortunately, the cub was a male which would have four fangs after growing up, so he temporarily kept it.

In the beginning, many people asked Shao Xuan for advice, but gradually, less and less people did so. After some hunting activities, less than one tenth of those asking for advice in the beginning would come to discuss the feeding experience with Shao Xuan, and the rest killed the cubs in the process to eat.

That was because it was the first time for the people in the tribe raising cubs. They handled some situations improperly, and sometimes were unable to control their strength. Some of them were impatient, or adopted the wrong way.

Of course, not all of the cubs were suitable to be trained as hunting animals, even if they were generally an aggressive specie, some had physical defects, or were timid in nature. Some even had other quirks. Even after training, they might not qualify.

Despite the great difficulty, a part of the people in the tribe still persisted in raising cubs while less and less people did so.

One day, the Shaman, after a walk in the tribe, asked Shao Xuan for a talk.

The Shaman could not stand it. He thought that it was a mess, raising cubs in the tribe, and the potential risk behind this was too great. He wanted to get qualified hunting animals with strength and loyalty, instead of those only with the power and the ferocious nature, but would betray in the end.

Training methods determined quality of the trained beasts.

Then Shao Xuan found a suitable open space at the foot of the mountain, and put up a whole piece of large stone slate there as a drawing board. As long as he didn't go out for hunting, he would stay there to explain some feeding skills every few days. When the two hunting groups were in between changing shift, he would spare some time to teach them. After all, if they began hunting, it was impossible for him to explain to the other hunting group.

"If you want them to learn what you teach, while training, you must give them your order and gesture before pulling the straw rope. In this way, they



would remember the meaning of your order and gesture. If you failed to do so and pulled the straw rope, they would have an impression of the straw rope rather than your order.

Caesar, come here...

Here is an example ... Well, just like this..."

More than once, Shao Xuan saw people in the tribe pulling their cubs and shouting their orders at the same. However, it was a pity that the training was not effective.

"I will tell you a few ways to train your cubs. The first one is mechanical stimulation. That is to say, with certain means, you force them to do what you request. For example, if you want it to lie down in the grass, in order to not let it get up, you can press it by hand. Through this way, you can make it lie in the grass. After receiving repeated training, the cubs will form the correct consciousness to take actions according to your order..."

While Shao Xuan was speaking, a young warrior, at the similar age of Shao Xuan, held the cub with his hand and said, "Like this?"

"...you're just holding it, not pressing it."

Details like this were all told by Shao Xuan to them.

In addition, Shao Xuan told them the method of food stimulation, the combination of mechanical and incentive training methods, and so on.

For many in the tribe, the most unacceptable method was food stimulation. In their view, the food was so valuable that they were reluctant to eat it themselves, let alone give some to the cubs which would have been eaten by them once caught. Simply unacceptable!

However, there were still some people who were willing to adopt this method, and most of them were young warriors, such as Mo Er and Mao.

In a situation like Shao Xuan at the beginning, Mo Er moved out to live alone and never starved. Many in Mo Er's family were warriors and he never lacked of food, so it was not a problem for him to give some food to feed the cub.

Sometimes, when explaining the imitation training, Shao Xuan would show them an example with Caesar, and let those cubs stay with Caesar more often.

Several young wolves could follow Caesar's actions, but it was a bit difficult for Mo Er's cave lion and Mao's Si Ya to do so, because the former was rebellious and the latter was simply gluttonous and lazy.

Mo Er's cave lion was named Liao (literally a hunt), it was totally different from those Shao Xuan had seen before.

Most cave lions lived in caves in mountains alone, not in groups. They often hunted alone, facing against of cave bears and other ferocious large mammals, so their strength was not weak. That was why they were not easy to tame.

Both Mo Er and Mao had to make more effort than others training their cubs. It depended on their patience.

Day by day, the cubs that were being brought back to the tribe became less and less, but the ones that survived were growing up.

After Shao Xuan's explanations and demonstrations, the young warriors gradually changed their training methods. Now, walking in the tribe, you could often see some of the young warriors keeping their cubs as company while they were chatting with others.

All those cubs were initially tied with a straw rope around their necks, but gradually, their necks were untied, but they didn't run around. Every time they went out, they closely followed the young warriors. Their training was effective.

Sometimes, two young warriors from different hunting groups competed with each other in terms of their raising skills.

In the tribe, some old people who hadn't hunted for many years worried that the beasts would hurt people at night. Therefore, they were not optimistic about this, and didn't want their offsprings trying it.

Among them, some had wounds and disabilities caused by ferocious beasts in the mountains and woods. Even though some beasts raised in the tribe were not so threatening, these old warriors were still wary of the beasts. Therefore, they gathered together to discuss about how to report this problem to the team leaders or the chief to make the youngsters give up keeping the beasts.

However, the two team leaders' children also kept beasts. The grandson of the chief even raised a bald boar! It was said that bald boar had eaten a lot of herbs which had been hidden by Ta. That was why Ta looked angry every day. But he didn't slaughter the boar.

The group of old warriors were very worried, but still could not think up a good reason to kill those cubs. That group of youngsters actively raised the cubs every day.

As the old warriors talked about this secretly, tightly holding a stone knife in the mountain, Ta was so angry that his blue veins were showing on his forehead, and his whole body was trembling, for he was fighting against his rage.

In front of him, the bald boar raised by his son had eaten a package of herbs under the stone bench. The herbs were used for pest control. If ignited, they could smoke a large number of insects to death. In spite of eating these herbs, the boar was still alive and energetic.

How many times did the boar do this? After waking up, it looked for something to eat everywhere with a strong sense of smell. Nothing would be left if found. Now, Si Ya was much stronger than the other cubs, possibly because it had eaten so much.

Ta didn't kill Si Ya just to avoid losing face. If he slaughtered it, the people on the other side of the mountain would have laughed at them for failing to raise a boar. That was why he had been fighting so hard against his rage.

"Eat it again, and I'll kill you!" Said Ta.

Chewing the herb, Si Ya looked up at Ta, grunting “Ah hum!”

Ta thought this bald boar was damned, wondering why Mao brought it back.

Compared with Shao Xuan's obedient Caesar, he thought this boar was completely a waste.

Coming back from the training ground, Mao found his father was angry, so he immediately took Si Ya outside.

“Tie it well! Use a thicker rope, and don’t let it go, or I’ll kill you!” Shouted Ta at the back of Mao.

Holding Si Ya in his arms, Mao ran away quickly, questioning in his mind why he was blamed for the boar’s mistake.

Somewhere on the hillside.

With a cold face, Mo Er looked at the ragged beast skin on the bed, and inclined his head to look at the place under the table against the wall.

“Come out!”

Hiding under the table, the cub shrank inside.

Holding the knife handle, Mo Er was thinking over whether to directly slaughter it.

In the tribe, raising cubs had brought trouble to many people, but Shao Xuan was now too busy to pay any attention to it.

In his study of old volumes engraved with secret crafts, Shao Xuan found that his promotion was mainly influenced by not the totem, but some other power inside him.

What on earth was the egg-shaped thing which covered the totem inside, or the strange stone which originally brought him to this world?

Warriors said it was the totem that influenced the power in everyone’s body, but Shao Xuan had a faint idea that the totem in his mind could not cross over the circle of the “egg” no matter how active it was. Even when the two horn flame was at its fiercest, it still failed to exceed the circle.

It was more likely that the energy absorbed by the fire crystal played a

supporting role, which could speed up the recovery, instead of enhancing, because the totem could not play a dominating role.

Putting down the animal skin volume and rubbing his eyebrows, Shao Xuan was thinking about what on earth the stone was made of?

At this time, Caesar came to him with a wooden box in his mouth. The wooden box was tied with straw, so Caesar directly bit the rope to hold it.

Inside the wooden box were stone weapons polished by Old Ke recently. Shao Xuan spent much time studying the old volumes. When Old Ke finished polishing some, he let Caesar send them to him.

Taking the wooden box, Shao Xuan patted Caesar's head, and asked, "I am going to set out again, would you like to follow me?"

Caesar immediately took a step forward, as if saying "Yes".

Shao Xuan rolled up and put away the animal skin on which he had intended to write something.

If not an accompanying hound as described in the old volume, then we will just use a wolf.

---

# Chapter 125 - The New Wolf Pack

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

Ta's hunting team was about to set out again. People in the tribe had been used to the presence of the unusual animal, which had been so far the only one that accompanied them on the Path of Glory.

In the beginning, it was beyond expectation that Caesar could succeed in joining the group to hunt for even several times in a row.

Caesar now had two scars. Although his wounds healed, the fur there hadn't grown back yet so scars were very noticeable. They were caused by an adult giant-claw beast in a hunting mission.

Shao Xuan was terribly scared at that time, because if Caesar had reacted even a little slowly, he would have been cut in half by the beast's giant claw. After that they returned to the tribe, Shao Xuan intended to stop him joining the next hunt to rest. However, it turned out that he followed the group so actively that Shao Xuan had no choice but to let him join.

Fond of running in the woods, he enjoyed confronting a prey which was much bigger than him. When the hunting time approached, Caesar was especially



excited. While resting to let the wounds heal, he was listless.

Now, the wounds had healed up, but the fur there did not grow back. Mai said that the fur around the two scars might be difficult to grow back.

Like the warriors in the tribe, the scars were the evidence for their combat achievements, proving that they had faced up to their overwhelming prey. That was why Caesar's scars drew much admiration, rather than raise doubts about his ability.

This time, before entering the woods, several small group leaders had talked together for a while and mentioned Caesar.

The other four were very envious of Mai. Since Mai got Caesar, he and his group members had received much surprise, from the fire crystal to the rare herbs, which were found by Caesar thanks to his great sense of smell. What's more, he could also assist them with assaults. How couldn't they admire him?

"Well, Mai, pay attention to ferocious beasts and other beasts in the hunting area. Some changes may happen." Said Cheng.

"Talking about this, I found that there were indeed some changes with the giant-antler deer herds, bison herds, and even wolf packs." Said Mai.

"What happened?"

Several other group leaders also asked about this curiously. After all, the mountain was so big, and the hunting area was just a small part of it. Generally speaking, ferocious beasts and other beasts there did not arbitrarily change their habitats, unless when the season shifted. In addition, predators hunted in their fixed areas most of the time.

However, Cheng and Mai even said that the ferocious beasts and other beasts appeared in different areas. This was unusual.

"Anything abnormal happened there?" A group leader said, referring to the accident relating to the bats during the first hunting mission of the year.

"No, no." Cheng shook his head, and said, "But it is related with the bats."

The group of bats chased away all the ferocious beasts to occupy a larger territory, forcing them to find new ones, so the battle between them had

continued until now. In addition to the threat brought by the group of bats, the surrounding ferocious beasts and other beasts had changed their habitats.

The birth of a strong could result in large-scale local restructuring.

In addition to the group of bats occupying the mountain, the giant pit witnessed changes.

Cheng also intended to go digging in the giant pit to see if he was able to find something useful. It turned out that he was unable to enter there again. The giant pit, stone crevices, and caves were filled with miasma. Originally, on the top of the hill there had been sparse grass, and now all was dead. The whole picture looked a bit dark and terrifying.

“Those bats are back?” Mai asked.

“I have no idea, but there were no bats to be seen.” Said Cheng.

“They can’t be back, the miasma is probably caused by dead bats and the other animals’ bodies.” A group leader said.

About one hundred bats in the middle of their metamorphosis stage died there, which possibly led to the miasma.

The first three missing members of Cheng's group had to be treated for a long time after being sent back to the tribe, which told them how harmful the miasma was. The others didn't stay there for a long time but still lost consciousness. It was thanks to Shao Xuan who took them out.

The awareness of the harm of the miasma made Cheng give up rushing in there with his group members, and even told them to keep away.

The mountain where the giant pit was and the territory occupied by the bats were not included in Mai's hunting route, but their hunt would still be affected.

"Do not mess with those bats," Said Mai.

"Of course, I get it." Cheng understood, but couldn't help complaining about it.

After entering the woods, the hunting groups set out separately, and Mai and his group members began to go to the holdout of their first hunting location.

Nothing unusual happened on the first day, but Mai told the other hunting groups to be cautious about the ferocious beasts which previously didn't appear in this hunting area, and to pay attention to the beasts' changes.

There was a giant-antler deer herd in the first hunting location where Mai and his group members went hunting.

"Mai, did you notice that in the recent hunting missions, we haven't come across the pack of wolves which often attacked the giant-antler deer herd." A middle-aged warrior in the group told Mai.

"Um." Mai nodded.

On Caesar's first hunt, he did not encounter that wolf pack. Everyone in the hunting group had been worried that Caesar would encounter the wolf pack, but he didn't confront the pack this year. The first encounter was caused by their deviation from their hunting route. And at the second one, they just saw several wolves from a long distance, those wolves didn't look very well.

Until now, they hadn't even seen a wolf, and they thought that this was

abnormal. The wolf pack should have always been around the giant-antler deer herd, but...

“Everybody should pay attention,” Said Mai.

No wolves competed with them, so the hunting group could catch many giant-antler deers every time they came.

Something whizzed past.

Caesar’s presence distracted two giant-antler deers and a few spears appeared.

Lang Ga and several people dragged the giant-antler deers aside and quickly dealt with them to make it easier to bring them back later.

Jumping on a stray old deer’s back, Caesar bit its neck. However, compared to the giant-antler deer, Caesar’s size didn’t have much advantage. Even though the deer was old, its power couldn’t be underestimated.

Getting rid of Caesar, the deer ran away so fast that Caesar failed to catch up with it. After chasing it for a distance, he slowed down and saw it run away farther and farther.

While dealing with the prey, Lang Ga and the others kept an eye on what happened there, and found that the deer bitten by Caesar was just a small shadow now. They intended to comfort Caesar, who, after all, did help a lot in the previous hunting missions. In addition, he never caused trouble like the cubs in the tribe. Therefore, he left such a good impression on them that they were not so afraid of him.

Thinking about what to say and fixing their eyes on what was to happen, Lang Ga and the others stopped their work. In particular, Caesar was about to look back, but did not expect, before he turned back, the deer was suddenly bitten by a large wolf.

The sudden attack made the deer stagger and fall down, it struggled to stand up, but the reality did not give it an opportunity to do so. The second and third wolves arrived...

A pack of wolves surrounded the deer. In spite of looking at them from afar,

Lang Ga could still see torn bloody meat flying through the air.

“Those wolves...” Lang Ga had an intuition that something bad was about to happen.

“Not the old wolf pack.” Mai looked slightly grave.

Each hunting group knew something about the preys and predators in their respective hunting areas, especially the wolf packs. It was natural that they were clear about what kinds of wolves were active there.

In spite of standing afar and seeing vaguely, they could judge from the hunting style that this pack was crueler than the old one. Instead of biting it to death directly, they gnawed it.

Caesar stared at the wolves in the distance, puckered his wrinkles on the nose, exposed his fangs, and growled.

“Caesar, come back!” Shao Xuan shouted.

This pack of wolves was dangerous to Caesar, similar to the previous wolves, Shao Xuan could not let Caesar confront them. On one hand, he was outnumbered. On the other hand, even if he fought against one of them, he might not win, because the wolves were generally larger and vicious. If he confronted them, it was more likely that he would be the loser.

When going there for hunting, warriors in the hunting group avoided provoking the wolves, for they were very vengeful. Once provoked, unless they were all slaughtered, they took revenge.

Since the new wolf pack emerged, the hunting group hurried to leave with the prey to return to the cave before it was too late.

“Caesar, stop looking, go!” Shao Xuan cried, having found Caesar was looking back.

Glancing at the wolf pack from a long distance, in the end, Caesar followed Shao Xuan and ran back to the first holdout.

At night, all the group members were having a barbecue while chatting in the cave. The entrance of the cave was blocked by a large stone, and wind blew in

only through some gaps and vents. After the Thorn Black Wind accident, Mai took this cave as the new holdout.

Mai stopped talking, so did the others. All were listening carefully.

There were some wolves howling.

The howling didn't come from afar. Those with poor hearing might not notice that but those present had much stronger sense of hearing than ordinary people.

"They are those we saw today, right?" Tu said in low voice.

This was Tu and Jie Ba third hunting mission with Mai's hunting group now. Their appearance didn't change, but their temperament was totally different. They were no longer the two warriors who lived in the cave and fixed their mind on food!

"Be more careful about the new wolf pack tomorrow. The wolves that were here before may have been defeated..." Said Mai.

There was an area shared by two packs of wolves, in which wolves from different groups might be seen. However, this area wasn't where they got together.

And now, a pack of wolves showed up at the foot of the mountain, it was obviously that the previous wolves were either defeated or dead.

When everyone was talking about the new wolf pack, Caesar kept an eye on what happened outside the cave.

Aware of Caesar's intention, Shao Xuan thought he had to pay more attention to him in the following days.

---



# Chapter 126 - Hatred

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

The next day, the hunting group saw the pack of wolves in the area where the giant-antler deer herd was active.

Yesterday, they stood quite a bit away that they failed to see those wolves clearly, so today they observed them carefully.

These wolves didn't look different from those living here before, but their sizes were bigger, and the color of their fur was different. They had a patterns on their bodies and some darker spots close to the back.

Since first entering the wild, Shao Xuan had seen many wolves of various colors. According to Mai and the others, there were some special packs. The pattern was the symbol of the pack, so a wolf with a different pattern might be an outsider.

Shao Xuan had never seen the wolves but Mai and the others might have seen them.

"Why do I feel that this wolf pack is familiar?" A warrior said.

"I also think that I have seen this pattern."

“We came across them when we surrounded a cave bear along our hunting route,” Mai recalled and said.

At that time, Mai and the others met a huge cave bear with wounds, possibly caused by a fight with another ferocious beast. So they took the opportunity to surround it and kill it.

However, even though the cave bear was injured, it was difficult to defeat. The hunting group chased it for such a long time that they had nearly deviated from the hunting route before they succeeded in killing it. At that time, there was a battle between two wolf packs. A pack massacred the other, and it was a real brutal massacre. The defeated wolves were not just bitten to death, many of them were even gnawed into pieces. Their blood covered the ground.

After killing the bear, Mai and his group members hurried away from there. Meanwhile, the massacre was over and a few wolves were wandering around, dragging the dead wolves on the ground. When the hunting group finally arrived there, they were already full. Among them, some were also wounded, so they avoided going into conflict with the hunting group, and the head led its members to leave.

Lang Ga was also there and caught Caesar, who was still a cub at that time.

Caesar was the sole survivor of the massacred wolf pack, probably because he left his den for fun to roll down from the steep slope not far from the den. The wolf guarding the den might have found the other wolf pack and have been very vigilant against them that he did not pay attention to Caesar.

When Mai and the others reached there, they found Caesar lying under a stone. After waking up from a coma, he kept howling. Hearing his howling, Lang Ga found him. He was blocked by a stone and surrounded by high bushes. If he stayed silent below the steep slope, no one would have ever noticed him. Fortunately, no wolves of the winning pack picked up the smell of the cub at the edge of the steep slope.

“I remember when Caesar was found, he was such a small one.” Lang Ga raised his hand to show how small he was, and said, “It even intended to bite me with his baby teeth.”

As they were recalling, Lang Ga and the others could not help laughing, for

Caesar was indeed small then, but soon they all became serious. Obviously, everyone had witnessed the massacre together with Mai and Lang Ga and felt uncomfortable.

They weren't actually being sentimental. Because as warriors hunting in the wild for so many years they had witnessed many battles among groups of beasts like this. In addition, who hadn't killed beasts or ferocious beasts as the hunting warriors? Could those with kindness survive here? That was impossible.

The reason why they felt uncomfortable was at the thought of the scene of how cruel the wolves were. That massacre could even be called a brutal murder.

"Unless you slaughter them all, don't mess with those guys, especially you few." Said Mai as he looked at the new members.

They nodded at once.

This year, there were also new members in the hunting group. Those new members always easily drew the attention of beasts and ferocious beasts in the woods who intended to attack the weak.

They had to go through what Shao Xuan had experienced.

"Ah-Xuan, keep an eye on Caesar." Whispered Mai to Shao Xuan.

“Got it.” Shao Xuan shared the same idea.

Then during the hunting missions Shao Xuan paid a lot of attention to Caesar. The fact that Caesar behaved as usual reassured him.

After hunting a giant-paw beast, a few people in the group were dealing with the game while Lang Ga was checking the trap. He asked Shao Xuan to repair it, because the important role of the trap could not be ignored.

Finding Caesar lying not afar, Shao Xuan came to help Lang Ga repair the trap.

“Lang Ga, when you got Caesar, did he see his pitiful wolf pack?” Shao Xuan asked.

Lang Ga carefully recalled and said, “Yes, he did. I picked him up from the slope, and put him on the ground. He smelled the surroundings as he was howling. He tried to bite two different patterned dead wolves, but failed to bite the wolf skin with his baby teeth.

[So sad, and yet so cute!]

In order to massacre the other pack, the winning pack also suffered losses. Two wolves of this pack lost their lives, but it wasn’t a loss as serious, because the defeated pack was completely wiped out.

“Those wolves with spots were very strong, and compared to the others, they had a stronger bite and a brutal nature. They often killed other wolves and attacked other beasts.” When he saw Shao Xuan frowning, Lang Ga laughed and said, “Are you worried that Caesar would take revenge? Back then he was just a cub. It is impossible.”

While talking, Lang Ga raised his head to look at Caesar lying not afar. Seeing him looking at them, Lang Ga lowered his head to continue repairing the trap. Each time he repaired the traps with Shao Xuan, Caesar always fix his eyes on them, lying not far from them.

“I didn’t think you would have kept it, I had intended to cook him for you.” The thought that Caesar had been almost been cooked amused Lang Ga, and he got mixed feelings.

Shao Xuan was listening while Lang Ga was talking about his experience at that time, when a shout broke out.

“Watch out!”

“Attention!”

“A wolf pack!”

Shao Xuan suddenly rose and looked around.

The laying Caesar disappeared.

Mai was nervously paying attention to the move of those wolves. They had intended to surround them, but soon Mai found Caesar rush out. Instead of confronting them head on, he bit the wolf at the border of its group and ran away immediately.

Mai felt that the wolves were planning to attack them, but the attack wasn't targeted at Caesar. On seeing Caesar, the wolves hesitated for a moment, but in response to the call of the head, they changed the target to chasing Caesar.

When they went hunting, Caesar usually helped attract the attention from the prey as planned. But the prey was not such a threat like the wolves. Why did Caesar suddenly rush out?

“Ah-Xuan, ask Caesar to come back...” Mai glanced around, but did not see Shao Xuan. His face turned blue and said, “Where is Ah-Xuan?!”

Jumping out of the high bushes, Lang Ga was out of breath and said, “I couldn't catch up with him.”

When he saw Shao Xuan leave, he followed him without delay in order to stop him. Unexpectedly, he was left behind and had no choice but to come back.

“He...runs too fast!” Said Lang Ga. He never thought that he, who had advanced to a intermediate totem warrior, and had a speed that was the fastest in the group, would unexpectedly be left behind in such a short time!

Mai took a deep breath. And then he looked at a few young warriors, and said, “You go back first to the cave! Qiao, take them away!”

Mai led a few warriors into the woods and followed the direction Lang Ga pointed at.

At the same time, Shao Xuan chased the wolves following the traces on the ground.

Caesar probably found the wolves before Mai and moved very fast. Perhaps he had been waiting, or he couldn't have so decisively rushed out.

Due to a delay, Shao Xuan couldn't see the wolves and just searched for them according to the nearby traces on the ground.

They didn't know until now that these wolves could run with such high speeds.

Shao Xuan was worried about Caesar, because if he fought against the wolves he had a slim chance to win and escape.

Lang Ga said Caesar did not hold a grudge, but Shao Xuan believed Caesar still remembered. As to how much Caesar remembered, Shao Xuan did not know.

While chasing, Shao Xuan looked in the direction of the wolves and thought of something.

Between the first holdout and the second one, there was a remote area near a mountain, where ferocious beasts seldom appeared, Lang Ga and Shao Xuan had set up traps there.

During the hunting period they might encounter some troubles, so they set up some traps in remote areas to handle such situations. If they encountered some ferocious beasts and other beasts that were difficult to handle, members of the hunting group would go to the trap zone, where those traps served as obstacles to the beasts, so they were given more time to escape.

It was Lang Ga that initially set those traps, later Shao Xuan and Lang Ga studied together to repair and even improve several of them. Those traps were

set to hurt, and even kill, the ferocious beasts.

Each time they came hunting, they had to check these trap zones. On the first day of this hunting mission, they had come to check them, and Caesar had watched them.

Many beasts stayed away from the places where the wolves often appeared, and some ferocious beasts there were afraid of getting into trouble and avoided confronting the wolves. This also facilitated Shao Xuan in catching up with the wolves.

Screams could be heard coming from the trap zone.

Shao Xuan sped up again.

When Shao Xuan arrived there, he saw the thorn pit, a wolf was lying in there.

The thorns did not pierce it deeply, but the harder it struggled to leave, the deeper the thorns went into its body. More and more blood was flowing out. As the thorns went deeper, it became weaker and weaker, because the thorns were smeared with a kind of herb juice that had an anesthetic effect. If no one took the thorn out, it would not take long for it to die. Shao Xuan did not care about it and just left.

Not far from the pit, a wolf was hanging in the air with a rope tied around its neck. The harder it struggled to leave, the tighter the rope became. This kind of rope was very strong because it was specially soaked in animal blood and herb essence. The hanging wolf struggled to bite the rope but failed again and again. When Shao Xuan saw it, its neck was deformed a little.

When Shao Xuan passed by, he cut it with his knife, so it no longer struggled.

A dead or a struggling wolf could be seen in the pits, lassos, nets and even near the knife piles. All of these wolves had spots close to their backs.

On his way chasing the wolves, Shao Xuan cut those struggling wolves with his sword. If he didn't have time to cut them, he threw a needle or a dart in order to kill them. If they weren't killed, they might just suffer excessively.

---



# Chapter 127 - The Wound

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

The trap zone was not very large, but many wolves were trapped in there. As Shao Xuan passed by, he found there were at least seven trapped or dead wolves in the traps.

Obviously, the pack of wolves, in the pursuit of Caesar, did not think that Caesar would bring them to such a place.

When Caesar ran past here, they had no time to react. They saw Caesar run past safely, so they naturally did not think that there was so much potential danger.

Usually, not so many wolves would be trapped, because the experienced animals in the woods had an intuition which allowed them to make instinctual judgment to avoid the traps, like the wolves with a lot of hunting experience. Their failure today was just accidental, for they focused on chasing Caesar and didn't have a second thought.

Passing the trap zone, Shao Xuan continued chasing them following the traces.

Not far from the trap zone, there was a natural tar pit, which was the largest one in the first location of their hunting route. Every day, many animals would be trapped inside, both walking and flying ones.

Shao Xuan had even seen an ox trapped in the pit. It was stuck in the pit, which attracted many carnivorous animals rushing to the pit. As a result, all of them sank into the pit.

No one knew how many bones there were in this tar pit.

There was also a small tar pit near the tribe. Shao Xuan had seen some people take the tar from the pit to build roofs. But for security, there were always some people in the tribe responsible for guarding it.

In this large tar pit, Shao Xuan saw two wolves caught inside. One third of their legs had been stuck in the pit. They tried to get out, but failed. If no one helped them out, they would gradually sink down to the bottom, like those who had sank down before for more than thousands of years. At the bottom of the pit, they would not be eaten by scavengers, so their bones would be well preserved. In the distant future, their bones might be discovered or be buried forever.

In general, shrewd animals rarely came close to here. Those who came here might be not very clever, newcomers, or greedy predators.

The border of this piece of tar pit looked black, but in fact, not every corner there could swallow people or animals. The hunting group was more familiar with this place. They had passed through from there before, and sometimes, in order to avoid some troublesome beasts or ferocious beasts, they took it as shelter. The path was so narrow that large ferocious beasts simply could not pass through.

Shao Xuan brought Caesar here once, and unexpectedly, he remembered this place. Some footprints here belonged to him and the others were from the other wolves.

Caesar was clever, so were some other wolves.

However, two wolves were still trapped inside.

The wolves had just arrived here, they were not familiar with this place. But

they might have seen a tar pit in their former territory. Their intuition told them that it was very dangerous here, but they didn't know where to go.

Shao Xuan found some footprints around the pit, which showed that some wolves had made a detour. Those wolves that didn't make a detour but followed Caesar got stuck.

Making a detour would take too much time, so Shao Xuan directly crossed the tar pit area and didn't pay any attention to the two wolves that sank deeper and deeper into the pit.

According to some traces, Caesar had gotten rid of most of the wolves, and killed almost ten of them after he passed the trap zone and the tar pit area.

This wolf pack consisted of thirty members, and suddenly the number of its members was reduced by one third.

If the wolves were timid, they would probably have given up chasing after Caesar. However, it was obvious that the wolves were cruel and vengeful enough to try to keep up with Caesar. Until now, only about three or four were able to keep up with him, and Shao Xuan met several halfway.

Staying with Shao Xuan, Caesar learned how to trick others into the the traps and the tar pit, and how to provoke the ferocious beasts in their territories. What's more, he knew how to turn the wolves chasing him into scapegoats.

The new wolf pack was not familiar with this place. This is why it was at a disadvantage.

But Shao Xuan was worried that Caesar might be injured now. In his pursuit of them, he found some blood on the ground. The blood might have been from either the wolves or Caesar. Shao Xuan needed to find him as soon as possible to confirm whether he was injured.

While running, Shao Xuan suddenly heard a cry from the woods.

Many birds in the woods were flying away while some small beasts were running out of the woods.

A giant bear!

In addition, Shao Xuan also heard some wolf howls. It was a cry from the other wolves rather than Caesar.

This giant bear was more difficult to deal with compared with the four-fanged boar. Though it looked bulky, it ran very quickly, so the hunting group stayed far away from it.

The hunting group had encountered the giant bear several times, and had been chased by it. When they met it, they often ran to the tar pit to trap it. However, it wasn't stupid, so it stopped at the edge of the area and then walked slowly around it, roaring and staring at them with rage. It seemed to tell them: "I'll eat you, sooner or later!"

Now, in order to defeat the wolves, Caesar even provoked the giant bear, possibly having dug his own grave.

Shao Xuan looked grave and rushed over.

The giant bear continued to roar, and soon, Shao Xuan saw the erect huge figure, exposing its fangs, and roaring towards a place on the ground.

In the direction of the giant bear's line of sight, Shao Xuan saw four wolves. Among them, the clearly bigger one was the head. Only four wolves managed to follow him here, because some wolves got stuck in the traps or the pit, and others were left behind.

These four wolves, including the head wolf, had blood dripping from their mouths.

Looking around, Shao Xuan did not find Caesar. There was a wolf with spotted patterns next to the giant bear, whose neck had been bitten by the giant bear.

The head wolf looked reluctant to give up and still roared towards the giant

bear, exposing its fangs. The giant bear was irritated, the wolves who lived here before didn't dare to provoke it in its territory. It was annoyed by the hunting group which hunted in its territory, but each time, it failed to catch any of them. This time it only found several strange wolves.

Roaring again, the giant bear vented its anger.

The situation was bad for the head wolf, so it had to give up chasing, and turned around to run away. The other three hastened to keep up with the bear.

The giant bear, with its four limbs on the ground, chased the head wolf immediately. Shao Xuan knew its temper, and guessed it would probably chase the head wolf for a while before it came back.

After the wolves and giant bear left, Shao Xuan jumped from the tree to carefully identify the smell in the air.

There were some animals killed by the giant bear, and the smell of blood was so strong that some scavengers were poised to act.

Shao Xuan looked around and then shifted to his other vision. The surrounding green grass and trees disappeared. All he could see were the shadows of trees, stones, as well as some animal skeletons.

Fixing his eyes on one place, Shao Xuan walked over there quickly.

Shifting to his normal vision, Shao Xuan walked in front of some plants with huge leaves. Under some overlapping large leaves, some blood flowed out.

Pushing aside the leaves, Shao Xuan saw Caesar lying under the leaves.

Caesar was in a bad situation. With his special sight, Shao Xuan found that he had several bone fractures. In addition to the fractures, he had some bites, two of which were deep, where large pieces of meat was bitten off so the blood kept flowing out.

Some blood was flowing out of his mouth, so his internal organs might also be damaged.

Shao Xuan at once took out the herbal package which contained some herb powders. He sprinkled the powder on Caesar's wounds.

The powder was soon soaked by his blood.

Doing this still wouldn't save him. If it had been in his former life, he would have taken him to get first aid. But now in such a place, Shao Xuan could do nothing more to save him with his limited herbs.

Caesar would soon take his last breath if Shao Xuan failed to do something more to save him. He felt that it became difficult for Caesar to breathe.

Aware of Shao Xuan's arrival, Caesar opened his eyes and intended to rise, but Shao Xuan quickly stopped him.

"Hey buddy, don't move. You'll worsen the injuries."

A minor move sped up the flow of his blood, which dripped to the ground with the powder.

Hearing Shao Xuan's words, Caesar stopped struggling to get up, and layed on the ground. He moved his head to touch Shao Xuan's hand with his nose, humming.

"Ssh, don't cry." Shao Xuan gently touched Caesar's head.

Although Caesar didn't cry, Shao Xuan could see sorrow from his eyes, probably because he knew he was in a bad condition.

Their waiting didn't help.

Could he bring Caesar back to the cave? It was impossible.

Because Caesar got injured so severely that he wouldn't withstand the shocks along the way. What's worse, it would take such a long time and he might die on the way.

Looking around, Shao Xuan took out another herbal package which wasn't for [external](http://cn.bing.com/dict/search?q=external&FORM=BDVSP6&mkt=zh-cn) application.

He put the herbal leaves in Caesar's mouth, but Caesar was too weak to chew.

Shao Xuan, without delay, smashed the herbs with the knife's back and poured it into the water gourd. Then he mixed it with water to pour it into Caesar's mouth. He did not know whether the herb would work but he had to try.

After feeding the herb to Caesar, Shao Xuan touched Caesar's head, and said, "Hold on, buddy. I'll be back."

He put down the big leaves to hide Caesar, so that those scavengers would not notice him as there was still much food left by the giant bear.

Shao Xuan picked up a few sticks and rattan grass to make a simple stretcher nearby, and then came back to put Caesar on it. He carried the stretcher and left.

There was a very large tree nearby, and Shao Xuan planned to put Caesar on the tree first. The giant bear would soon come back, so they couldn't stay there for a long time. In addition, it gradually became dark, so the tree might be a relatively safe place for them.

Shao Xuan found a long strong rattan to tie the stretcher. Then he stood on a branch to pull the other end of the rattan over the top of another branch in order to draw Caesar up to the tree.

When Shao Xuan pulled Caesar up, the giant bear returned after chasing the wolves and saw a group of scavengers eating its prey. The giant bear roared angrily and rushed over to tear some beasts into pieces. The rest left instantly.

Making sure that no other animals were nearby, the giant bear began to continue gnawing its prey.

---



# Chapter 128 - Branding and Engraving

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

The light of the sun gradually disappeared, and two moons emerged above the woods.

Some nocturnal animals became active, while most of the birds flew back to their nests.

Above the bough where Shao Xuan was in, there were many nests, but he avoided provoking those birds.

These birds seemed not so large, and looked attractive. But in fact, they were very dangerous, because they flocked to prey on animals that were seriously injured or had just died.

Due to a fight among the birds, a bird fell from its nest to the bough where Shao Xuan stood.

Turning over and shaking its wings, the bird looked at Shao Xuan.

At night, its eyesight was not so good, but its sense of smell was good enough to find the smell of Caesar's blood, and it also felt Caesar's weakness.

The bird was about to fly back to its nest, but changed its mind to rush towards Caesar. Its open mouth exposed its dense fangs. Its beak with saw-like edge helped it scrape off pieces of meat with just a bite.

When the bird flew over, Shao Xuan quickly stepped forward and stabbed the bird with the stone knife in his right hand quickly.

The bird was so excited by the smell of blood that it completely ignored Shao Xuan. It suddenly realised death was coming.

The next moment, it was pierced by Shao Xuan's stone knife.

Shao Xuan no longer looked at the bird and threw the stone knife with the bird to the trunk.

On the trunk, there was a hole emitting flashing green light.

When Shao Xuan threw the bird towards the trunk, many open mouths instantly appeared in the tree hole, swallowed the bird completely, and then retreated back to the hole. The green light continued flashing to attract some of the flying night insects, and then the open mouths ate them.

That was some kind of a tree insect living in the tree. They looked no different from other insects in the daytime, but at night, they emitted light to lure their prey.

Many birds in the tree were still covetously staring at Caesar. If Caesar was left alone here, he would be eaten, and only bones would be left within several minutes. These birds were inactive at night, but would still take actions to capture and eat their prey. They would not miss any weak animals.

Shao Xuan stayed awake, because in the woods, it was only a little safer for them to stay in the tree in the evening. There was still a lot of danger in the tree, so he had to be vigilant.

When Shao Xuan was looking for some rattan vines to make a stretcher, he had also found a few herbs to treat Caesar, but they were not effective. As time went by, little by little, Caesar got worse and worse.

After all, Caesar was not a totem warrior. If he had the resilience of a totem warrior, he would be able to survive for some time longer. Totem warriors had an

ability to heal, which allowed them to stay alive longer so that they could be sent back to the tribe.

However, Caesar was just an ordinary wolf, and his inherent situation determined that he couldn't become a stronger beast or a ferocious beast in a short time. In terms of physical quality, he was even worse than most wolves of the new wolf pack.

His ability to heal was limited, which Shao Xuan couldn't change.

Thinking about this, Shao Xuan sighed with sadness. After all, he had kept Caesar since he came to this world.

For more than two years...

An idea suddenly hit Shao Xuan.

The ability to heal?

Yes, the ability to heal!

It was possible to improve Caesar's ability to heal as long as Caesar could become a ferocious beast from a common one. Even if he failed to become a ferocious beast, he would survive a bit longer with an increased healing ability.

A way to make Caesar a ferocious beast in a short time was the profound craft of engraving and branding, recorded in the ancient volumes!

According to the old saying, for using the profound craft of engraving and branding, there were strict requirements. Caesar met some of the requirements: First, he could accompany the hunting group. And second, he was loyal. Even though Caesar failed to satisfy all the requirements put forward by the ancestors, Shao Xuan still decided to try.

Shao Xuan was not sure whether the profound craft of engraving and branding would work. That was why he didn't impose it on Caesar before, but now, besides that, he had no other option.

If he tried, he might succeed or fail. If he failed, Caesar would not see the sun tomorrow. Otherwise Caesar would survive.

If he didn't try, Caesar would die without doubt.

"Hey, buddy." Shao Xuan touched Caesar's head and said, "There is a way that may save you, if it works, you will become more powerful, and even a ferocious beast. Otherwise, you have to say goodbye to this world."

Caesar opened his eyes, and wanted to touch Shao Xuan's hand with his nose,

but he was too weak. He only looked at Shao Xuan.

The branches were waving in the evening breeze, and some slight moonlight shining through the the gaps of the leaves reflected in Caesar's eyes. The light made this pair of wolf eyes look a bit terrifying, like two flashing lights. In the woods, many animals' eyes looked like this at night.

Shao Xuan was not scared, and raised his hand to touch Caesar's head.

"Good, you agree. Old Ke is still at home waiting for you, and many cubs in the tribe are waiting for you to teach them. Without you, they may be cooked soon. The wolves that exterminated your tribe are still alive, and do you not still want to take revenge?"

The profound craft of engraving and branding depended on both the wish of the performer and the recipient. If the recipient was willing to accept, the success possibility would be greater. Otherwise, the possibility of failure was stronger. Even if it worked, it might create a rebellious ferocious beast. That was why the ancestors preferred to choose loyal ones.

Caesar's present state was not suitable to perform the profound craft of engraving and branding, so in order to make the possibility of success stronger, Shao Xuan was arousing his desire to survive.

The potential in the desperate situation was unpredictable. That's why there were some sayings such as fighting back in a desperate situation, and being reborn from the ashes.

After talking to Caesar for a while, Shao Xuan no longer hesitated to take actions. He should start now while Caesar is still conscious.

He made a simple fence with rattan to prevent the interference of other small beasts.

Shao Xuan didn't know what changes the profound craft of engraving and branding would bring in the end, but he was willing to take a risk to have a chance this time.

Shao Xuan put the stone knife in his left hand, and then squatted to raise the right hand in front of Caesar.

After carefully recalling the record in the ancient volumes, as well as his usual practice, Shao Xuan began to mobilize the power of inheritance in his body.

In his sea of consciousness, from the bottom of the totem flame to the two horns, the blue flame gradually increased. A trace of blue separated from it.

At the same time, under Shao Xuan's right palm, the blue threads began to form two horns. The horns were not the two-dimensional pattern, but the three-dimensional totem shape. They were much smaller than that of the flame pit in the tribe, it was the size of a walnut.

The two horns gradually formed. When they were well depicted, some blue flame began to surround them, and over the blue flame, a red flame began to appear.

During this process, Shao Xuan did not dare to have the slightest carelessness and make a small mistake, which might cause failure in the engraving and branding, and the totem shape would scatter. When the red flame finally appeared and stabilized, Shao Xuan felt slightly relieved, which proved the formation of the totem shaped by the power of inheritance. But this was just the beginning.

After the engraving step was finished, Shao Xuan started the 'branding' step.

After successfully engraving the totem, Shao Xuan moved his palm to brand it on Caesar's forehead.

The totem moved with Shao Xuan's hand. When he touched Caesar, it was not immediately branded on Caesar. Though Shao Xuan felt the resistance in his hand, he did not worry, for it was recorded in the ancient volumes that there would be a lot of resistance in the step of branding. After all, Caesar was not a member of this tribe, and he was not a human either, so there would naturally be some resistance.

Without a pause, Shao Xuan continued slowly branding the totem. He could brand it neither too quickly nor too slowly. The speed must be controlled by him according to his intuition, because it was not recorded in the ancient volumes.

As Shao Xuan's palm pressed down, the two horns totem was slowly branded into Caesar's head.

With his palm attached to Caesar's head, Shao Xuan finished branding, but did not immediately pull back his hand. He helped guide the flow of the totem power inside Caesar.

Caesar was still conscious, and began to follow Shao Xuan's guidance to mobilize this emerging power.

He knew what it was, he felt it during the tribe's ritual at the end of every winter. He was fearfully avoided it twice before, but now he found it close and familiar.

When Caesar's consciousness began to dominate, Shao Xuan drew back his hand.

He wiped away the sweat on his forehead, and glanced around. If some beasts or ferocious beasts had attacked them, they would have failed. It was fortunate that no beasts took actions.

Looking at Caesar lying on the bough, Shao Xuan knew that was all he could do for the whole process. The rest depended on Caesar himself. If he could master and accept this ability, he will succeed. Otherwise, he will die due to his serious injuries soon.

Shao Xuan soon found Caesar trembling more and more violently. His body began to twitch.

Puff!

Caesar spit out blood, and the blood spilled all over Shao Xuan.

Kaka!

Kaka!

With a burst of brittle bones, Caesar swelled up as he was supported by his bones. His fur looked as if it was attached to his bones so he looked skinny.

What happened?!

Shao Xuan looked at this change with great shock.

Such a change was not recorded in the ancient volumes, which only mentioned that after the fusion of the hound and the totem, the hound would grow into a stronger beast than others of its kind, and even become a ferocious beast in a short period of time. A short period of time didn't refer to several minutes or hours, but dozens of days!

But now, only a few minutes after the craft was performed, Caesar began to change.

Shao Xuan did not know whether he would change like what the ancestors



had said, for there were no detailed records.

Shao Xuan had been paying attention to Caesar's state, whose fractured bones had reshaped and had become much bigger. His two severe wounds had stopped bleeding, you could see bones in one wound.

Although his changes went beyond Shao Xuan's expectation, and differed from the records in the ancient volumes, Shao Xuan could feel Caesar's vitality become stronger. The change of his vitality was not as obvious as that of his appearance, but such change was indeed a good sign.

Those birds above that stared at Shao Xuan and Caesar, and waited for the opportunity to attack them, retreated to their nests. They no longer looked below, and all of them became as timid as quails.

In the tree hole, the tree insect emitting green light climbed deeper inside, and its light became bleaker.

---

# Chapter 129 - The Mutation

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

It was a peaceful night. A few ferocious beasts quietly walked past the tree. They probably smelled Caesar's blood so they looked up the tree. Then they swaggered away without doing anything threatening.

In the hole of the trunk, the insect no longer came out. Even when a flying insect flew to the tree hole, it no longer stretched out to open its mouth.

Shao Xuan guessed it was the profound craft that kept the other animals away, just like what happened with the tribal ceremony. Now, even though there was no flame, no ferocious beasts or other beasts attacked them, which might not be a coincidence.

In spite of knowing this, Shao Xuan still kept vigilant for the whole night.

In the early morning, the two moons gradually disappeared in the sky.

The birds in the tree had been twittering actively.

When the sunlight shone through the leaves, the birds that had stayed in the nests above Shao Xuan had already left.

Caesar's wounds had stopped bleeding, the scabs there looked a bit horrible, but in fact, the wounds were healing up.

Lying on the bough, Caesar breathed steadily and did not wake up. Hearing his breath gradually become louder, Shao Xuan felt reassured temporarily. He also examined the broken bones in Caesar's body, and found they now had recovered without even any traces of fracture.

Were these good changes brought by the profound craft?

Shao Xuan stood still for a moment in the tree, and listened carefully. He heard the sound of a wood whistle, so he guessed the hunting group was looking for them. He quickly took out his wood whistle and blew it according to their rhythm, which sounded like birdsong in the woods.

After a while, Mai came over with the others, looking for them.

"Ah-Xuan!"

When Mai saw Shao Xuan standing in the tree, he finally felt relieved.

The sight of Caesar shocked Mai.

"How did he get injured so seriously..." Mai didn't continue because he became distracted.

No!

"He... he is..."

Pointing at Caesar lying there, Mai stuttered with doubts in his eyes.

"Is he...Caesar?" Lang Ga went forward to look at him carefully. "He was not so large yesterday. Why do I feel he grew up overnight?"

The others who came with Mai also nodded, glancing at Caesar constantly.

"He was injured yesterday, and experienced some changes." Said Shao Xuan.

“But he has changed a lot.” Lang Ga muttered.

However, they shouldn't talk about this at this moment. Their priority was leaving here and going back to the cave.

Mai and the others hadn't gone back and kept vigilant for the whole night. At dawn, they continued looking for Shao Xuan, so they didn't sleep.

Looking at their faces wrought with obvious fatigue, Shao Xuan felt very sorry.

“Sorry.” Said Shao Xuan.

Mai waved his hand, and said “Go back first.”

Although he would like to beat Shao Xuan here, he knew the priority was going back to the cave, for those waiting for them in the cave hadn't slept either.

Shao Xuan put Caesar down slowly from the tree with the stretcher, for Caesar hadn't woken up.

Yesterday, the stretcher fitted him well, but today, when Caesar was put on it again, the stretcher was so small that half of his head and tail exceeded the edge of the stretcher.

Mai and the others picked him up under the tree. After they put down the stretcher, they said, “He became much heavier.”

“He became bigger and thinner.” A middle-aged man next to Mai whispered.

Caesar was raised very well, and he never got thin, even when he went hunting with the hunting group, different from those starving beasts in the woods. But now, Caesar looked skinny and even appalling.

With the help of Mai and the others, Shao Xuan found it much easier to carry the stretcher to bring Caesar back to the cave.

People staying in the cave of the first holdout did not sleep well. Qiao and the others had waited for them at the entrance for the whole night. All of them were very anxious. The return of Mai and Shao Xuan with all the other members

reassured them.

“It is good that all of you came back safely.” Qiao looked at those who had just returned. After carefully looking at Shao Xuan, she found he wasn’t hurt, and then she smiled.

“I’m sorry to worry everyone.” Said Shao Xuan, admitting that his leaving without saying a word was a mistake.

“That’s all right.” Qiao intended to ask them about what happened yesterday, with her eyes fixed on the stretcher. She first guessed Caesar got injured, and then she found something unusual.

“Go inside first.” Mai carried the stretcher to the cave.

Shao Xuan settled Caesar down and asked for some drugs to treat Caesar’s wounds.

When applying the drugs to Caesar, Shao Xuan briefly told everyone what happened to him after he left them.

The surrounding people were shocked by Shao Xuan's words, especially Lang Ga.

Swallowing his saliva, Lang Ga thought it was unbelievable, and questioned, "The trap zone? Caesar led the wolves to the trap zone!"

He didn't feel it was a pity that his traps were destroyed, but felt shocked that Caesar could trick his opponents with the traps.

"In addition, he also led them to the tar pit." Said Shao Xuan. Standing next to him, Lang Ga could not help scratching his arm, and felt very horrified.

Since they went hunting, they always thought that only human beings could use the trap to defeat the beasts and ferocious beasts. It was unexpected that the animals could also do this. In the past, this was absolutely unimaginable.

"Why does Caesar look..."

"He mutated." Said Shao Xuan.

To a certain extent, Caesar's change was a mutation.

"Mutation?" Lang Ga didn't understand this word.

"That is to say, Caesar may have become close to a ferocious beast, or even completely a ferocious beast." Shao Xuan explained it briefly and directly.

Everyone was astonished.

This beast in the group had drawn much discussion from them, and now Shao Xuan told them that this beast changed into a ferocious beast.

A ferocious beast!

That was a giant leap.

Were they about to go hunting with a ferocious beast?

That sounded...disconcerting but also exciting.

"It depends. Let's have a look when Caesar wakes up." Said Shao Xuan.

"Well, since that none of us had a good sleep yesterday, let's take a break

today and go hunting tomorrow.” Said Mai.

Shao Xuan lay down against the wall, next to Caesar. He took out the fire crystal given by the Shaman from the animal skin bag when everyone didn't pay attention to him.

He had spent a lot of the totem power on the profound craft last night. He concentrated on engraving and branding, and after having finished, he had to stay vigilant. Shao Xuan was so tired that he grasped the fire crystal to recover his power.

The fire crystal was originally red as fire, but the color became light, which was not very obvious, but Shao Xuan found it.



This change was not so obvious, but the power released by the fire crystal was enough for at least three warriors. It was unexpected that its power had been unconsciously consumed so much.

The profound craft was power-consuming, he should be more cautious in using it.

When Shao Xuan and the others took a rest in the cave, Mai led a few people to the trap zone.

In the trap zone, there were indeed several dead wolves which had been gnawed by other beasts and scavengers. Only bloody bones were left, because the smell of blood had attracted some animals.

**“That is true...”** Said Mai with wide open eyes after he took closer looks at a few traps.

“Ah Xuan did not lie.”

“Well, Caesar ... really knows how to trap others.”

Not only Mai and his wife Qiao, but also the others who came with them, thought that if the cubs in the tribe changed like Caesar, they would...

“Mai, that would help us a lot!” Said Qiao.

“Their help may change the hunting group!”

They still had some concerns. If those cubs grew up, would they betray the group? However, since the Shaman had agreed, it must be a good thing.

The members of the hunting group had a simple mindset. Even though they had many other ideas, they believed it was absolutely right as long as the Shaman agreed.

Yes. All they had to do was to follow the Shaman’s words!

After figuring it out, Mai and the others felt more relieved. Several other people even thought about how to persuade Mai to catch cubs for his twins, and ask Shao Xuan to train them.

Mai didn't say yes or no.

In the evening, everyone by the bonfire discussed the training of the cubs in the tribe in the future.

Suddenly, lying next to Shao Xuan, Caesar moved.

Lang Ga, nearest to Shao Xuan, also found Caesar move, so he went to have a look immediately.

"Ah , Caesar is waking up?"

Ready to look at him carefully, Lang Ga lowered his head. When he saw his eyes, he was dumbfounded.

Lang Ga felt like he fell into a pool of ice-cold water, a chill rushed over his scalp. All his muscles became tight, and his smile was wry. His veins in the arms stood out. He fought against his impulse of cutting him with his stone sword.

Caesar's eyes were feral, cruel, and cold. Lang Ga saw such eyes in the woods every day.

"What's up?" Asked the others who came.

Lang Ga opened his mouth, intending to tell everyone not to come closer. But he soon found the pair of eyes become gentler. When he looked at him again, he believed he was still the wolf familiar to him.

He was Caesar. Not a ferocious beasts from the woods.

When Shao Xuan came to check Caesar's wounds, Lang Ga moved his cold hands with a wry smile, and said, "Nothing special. It's good that Caesar has woken up."

After waking up, Caesar slowly stood up and walked around in the cave.

"Why do I feel nervous every time Caesar approaches?" Said Tu to the people next to him.

"Me... Me too..." Said Jie Ba also.

Shao Xuan cut some meat left in the cave for Caesar.

Caesar's appetite became much bigger, he still looked hungry after eating half a deer, as if he was not full. But there was not much food in the cave, so he didn't continue eating.

The next day, the hunting group was ready to continue hunting. The skinny Caesar followed them.

"Why not let him rest for another few days?" Mai asked Shao Xuan.

"No, he is fine."

Caesar was moving without hesitation. It seemed like he was looking forward to it, and could not help rushing into the woods. The sight of this made Mai no longer reject his company.

The pack of wolves was not seen near the giant-antler deer herd, so the hunting group planned to get more deer.

They drove away the deer herd and aimed at the stray deer.

“That one!” Shouted Lang Ga, he intended to let Caesar drive the deer to him, only to see a dark gray figure flash across and rush to the deer.

Bang!

The deer and the dark gray figure fell down together.

When Lang Ga looked at them again, he found the deer had fallen to the ground, and Caesar was biting its neck.

---

# Chapter 130 - The Head Wolf

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

The day before yesterday, Caesar had been badly hit by an old giant-antler deer, but today he could throw a younger one on the ground.

His speed and power shown just now were more than those of two days ago.

Ka!

That giant-antler deer no longer moved after a crisp sound was heard.

Caesar then loosened its neck and took a breath, the deer blood dripped from his fangs as he ran on the ground. Because of his hunting the deer, his eyes were still filled with violence, and he seemed to be very excited.

Looking at Caesar, Lang Ga and the others didn't dare to say anything, let alone order him to drive the stray deer.

Although Caesar could move without difficulty, he was still a little weak. After taking a breath, he opened his mouth to bite the deer's neck again, and then dragged it to Shao Xuan.

Mai and the others witnessed this scene in fear.

He had just thrown the deer on the ground, and what was he doing now? Even though Caesar became bigger, compared to the adult giant-antler deer, he was still much smaller. But at the moment, he was dragging the deer to Shao Xuan, step by step.

According to the speed and power that Caesar had shown just now, Mai and the others looked at one another, and came to a conclusion.

He became a ferocious beast!

Perhaps he was inferior to the ferocious beasts like the four-fanged wild boar, but he was still a ferocious beast.

Mai and the others knew that Caesar was not malicious, but looking at him dragging the deer step by step past them, inevitably made them nervous. All of their muscles were tight, and they also found Caesar's breath full of the smell of deer blood.

He killed it in a very bloody manner.

This was what a ferocious beast was like.

They might defeat the beasts without difficulty, but when confronting ferocious beasts, they never dared to underestimate them and always stayed vigilant. They never thought that they would be so close with a ferocious beast.

After putting the dead deer down in front of Shao Xuan, Caesar began to help others to hunt. He had hunted one, so now he planned to not kill the prey again but only help them drive the stray deer.

At first, everyone was still very nervous, but they devoted themselves to the mission as soon as they started hunting.

In the past, Caesar had had difficulty in driving those stray deer. Sometimes, those deers' eyes were filled with indifference. But they had also been attacked by the wolves similar to Caesar many times, so it was inevitable that they were scared of the wolves. That was why sometimes they turned around and ran away at the sight of Caesar.

But now, after witnessing Caesar's killing of a young adult deer, they were frightened by him, especially those stray deer ran away as fast as possible

without hesitation at the sight of Caesar.

Caesar could easily defeat the deer besides those with giant antlers. Fortunately, they seldom left the group, for they had to protect their cubs. As long as the number of killed deer was acceptable, they would not turn up.



While dragging their prey back to the cave, people in the hunting group still had mixed feelings.

In the past, it was unimaginable that humans went hunting with the help of a ferocious beast.

However, their group had been the first to go hunting with a beast, and now was the first to go with a ferocious beast.

The thought of this was a little exciting.

Mai also talked with Qiao in private about whether to catch two cubs for Ah-Yang and his younger sister, Ah-Guang, to let them train them. However, they refused Mai's advice. They said that after they improved their strength, they would catch the cubs on their own.

"To catch a strong one." Ah-Guang said.

"Yes." Ah-Yang agreed and said, "As obedient as Caesar!"

"Yes!"

"Not a bald boar like the one Mao keeps!"

"Yes!"

Listening to their talk, Mai shook his head, smiled and said, "Not every beast can...experience variation."

Shao Xuan did not tell them about the profound craft, he thought that it should be the Shaman that should work out how to explain it, instead of him. So he should discuss that with the Shaman when he returns to the tribe.

The day before the hunting group left for the second location, Caesar left them for a while, but Shao Xuan did not follow him. When Caesar came back again, he was slightly injured, and there was a lot of blood on his fur, most of it was not Caesar's. In Caesar's mouth, there was a wolf bitten by the neck, being dragged back by him.

"This is...the head wolf of the pack?!" Mai looked at the patterns of the dead

wolf, and spoke with great surprise.

“It looks like the head wolf.” Said Lang Ga as he glanced at it.

“Did Caesar massacre the wolf pack?” Someone asked.

“Maybe he did.”

“That is to say, there are no more wolves in this place temporarily, right?”

Whether Caesar massacred that wolf pack, or just killed the head wolf, it was good for the hunting group. At least the threat of the wolf pack was gone. They really did not want to confront such a brutal wolf pack.

Caesar dragged the wolf in front of Shao Xuan and put it down, looking at Shao Xuan.

“This is your prey. First, go with the group and put it in the storage cave. When I go back, I will peel the skin off to keep your den warm.” Said Shao Xuan.

Caesar seemed satisfied with Shao Xuan's advice. He put it down, and no longer looked at it, lying down to take a rest. Scabs had formed on his wounds, so no drugs were needed.

As soon as Caesar left, several young warriors, including Ah-Yang, his sister, Tu, and Jie Ba, came to look at the rare dead wolf. They did not dare to go close to a living wolf, but they were not afraid of a dead one, and this one still looked ferocious at the moment.

Just like Mao with the Thorn Black Wind, these young warriors were curious about the head wolf. They touched it from the fangs to the claws, and spoke highly of it.

"It is worthy of being a head wolf! Look at its fang and its claws!"

"Brother Xuan, will Caesar become a head wolf in the future?" Ah Yang and his sister looked at Shao Xuan and asked.

"I have no idea." Said Shao Xuan.

Would the wolf kept as a company by a hunting group become a head? Everyone shook their heads.

However, there were many...cubs in the tribe.

Maybe he would really become a leader!

But they did not know how long to wait.

The following hunts were much easier than usual thanks to the help of Caesar. Mai and the others felt less stressful for there being many young warriors in the group. The more helpful assistants, the more chance for them to succeed in getting their prey.

And when this hunting mission was finished, the hunting group returned to the tribe along the hunting route. Walking past the hunting area of the first location, they no longer saw any wolfs with spotted pattern on their backs.

That wolf pack might have disappeared in the woods.

As the days went by, although Caesar still looked very thin, he was no longer as skinny as he was when he had just woken up. With the passage of time, he would get better.

Caesar's daily food was his prey, and he ate so much that Shao Xuan could not provide enough food for him, but fortunately, he had hunted a lot of prey to store food for himself, and brought the food back to the tribe.

On the day when the hunting group returned to the tribe, Caesar once again aroused heated debate.

But Shao Xuan did not talk about him too much until he was summoned by the Shaman.

"Did you use the profound craft?" The Shaman asked him with confidence in his eyes.

Even if the ancestors themselves performed the craft, they had a 50 percent chance to succeed. However, Shao Xuan succeeded in his first try. The Shaman did not know whether his success was because of his luck or any other factors.

Shao Xuan could conceal the reason of Caesar's change from everyone except the Shaman, but he didn't intend to conceal it from the Shaman.

He told the details to the Shaman, and said, "His change scared me, for it differed from the records in the ancient volumes left by ancestors."

In order to confirm it, the Shaman once again carefully looked through the animal skin volumes related to the profound craft. He didn't find any records similar to Caesar's change. It wasn't recorded that a branded hunting animal would change so rapidly in such a dramatic way.

The effect of the profound craft seemed different from what the ancestors said.

Then the Shaman let Shao Xuan bring Caesar to him so that he could have a closer look at him. After his careful observation, he thought that Caesar's change was much bigger than what was recorded by the ancestors. What's more, Caesar kept changing after waking up. With the passage of time, his change would become increasingly apparent, for he didn't stop growing. Sometimes, when he was active in the house, Old Ke was afraid of the walls collapsing.

"If Chacha meets the requirements, I will also perform the craft on him to see if he will change." Said Shao Xuan.

With the first attempt, Shao Xuan had confidence in performing the craft again successfully. In fact, thinking about it, he found it not as difficult as recorded.

If the Shaman knew Shao Xuan's thoughts, he probably would go to the flame pond to kowtow to the ancestors. Such a talent, but why can't he become the Shaman?!

Hearing Shao Xuan's mention of Chacha, the Shaman did not agree with him.

"No, Chacha is different from Caesar." Said the Shaman.

Shao Xuan wasn't sure of the Shaman's meaning, but before he could continue asking him about it, the Shaman started talking about other things.

Since the craft had been successfully performed on Caesar, then the tribe should have a good look at developing the other cubs.

The Shaman would feel contented if even one-tenth cubs in the tribe could

grow as well as Caesar.

Gradually growing up, the cubs were not as obedient as Caesar, and none of them was easy to control, while most of the people in the tribe had a bad temper. If Shao Xuan didn't give lectures to teach them some skills in raising the cubs, they might have beaten, or even cooked the cubs.

Saying goodbye to the Shaman, and going down the mountain, Shao Xuan saw Caesar followed by a few wolf cubs that had grown a lot. At this time next year, they would form a small wolf pack.

When the several young people who raised the wolf cubs saw Shao Xuan, they at once came to consult with Shao Xuan. Some who had not taken it seriously before, changed their attitude after witnessing Caesar's change.

After Shao Xuan left, the Shaman came to where the ancient volumes were stored. He opened a huge stone box, in which a large number of volumes were placed in order.

The Shaman took out several original ancient volumes, which were related with the profound craft.

The Shaman thought it was time for him to reveal the things related with the hunting animals and the profound craft.

Taking out several animal skin volumes, the Shaman glanced at the substantial volumes in the box and sighed. He then closed the stone box.

He believed that the concealed history would gradually be revealed to everyone.

---

# Chapter 131 - The New Route

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

If Shao Xuan did not go hunting, every few days he would go up the mountain to hand in the animal skin volumes that the Shaman asked him to draw.

This time, Shao Xuan drew common volumes, rather than the Shaman volumes.

The Shaman planned to tell everyone that the ancestors had also kept hunting animals. In this way, he could stimulate them to raise and train cubs. But some content in the ancient volumes could not be disclosed, and he would reveal the rest, which would be drawn by Shao Xuan, who had more excellent drawing skills than the others. The annotations were derived from part of the original version of the ancient volumes.

It was much simpler to draw the common volumes, for drawing the Shaman Volumes needed the power of inheritance.

Unexpectedly, one hundred copies of the volume with annotations were finished by Shao Xuan within ten days.

Today, Shao Xuan took the last ten copies to the Shaman, up the mountain.



Shao Xuan often visited the Shaman, which was not strange to those in the tribe. Moreover, the man who guarded the door for the Shaman no longer stopped him, because the Shaman had said that Shao Xuan could enter his house directly.

“These are the last ten.” Shao Xuan put them on the stone table in front of the Shaman to let him check whether all their contents could be released as planned.

The Shaman quickly opened and glanced at them. Then he put them aside, but did not let Shao Xuan leave right away like before.

Shao Xuan knew that this old man had something to tell him, and would have a long talk so he sat down, waiting for what he would say next.

Seeing Shao Xuan's reaction made the Shaman smile. Then the smile gradually faded, and he said: “Do you know what the Chief, several elders in the tribe, and I are discussing about?”

Shao Xuan shook his head. He knew that recently the Chief, the two team leaders, as well as several old warriors often came here together to talk with the Shaman. He guessed they discussed something important, so each time, Shao Xuan did not stay in the Shaman's house for a long time. The Shaman would tell him what he needed to know sooner or later, so Shao Xuan was not curious about it. But now, it seemed the Shaman did not intend to conceal it any longer from him.

The Shaman took out a large animal skin reel and unfolded it on the stone table, and said, “Do you know what is in this reel?”

Leaning forward, Shao Xuan glanced at the drawing on the reel.

Although some details of the drawing were omitted, something could still be seen. He said, “This is the tribe, and these are the hunting routes.”

The animal skin reel on the stone table was a simple map, on which only the location of the tribe and several hunting routes were painted.

Most things in the animal skin reel were painted in black, including the tribe and the several hunting routes, but one of them was painted in red, which was an unknown route to Shao Xuan.

The Shaman raised his finger to point at the red route, and said, “This is what we are discussing.”

Staring at the route, Shao Xuan thought about it. He raised his eyebrows, looked at the Shaman, and said, “Are you planning to start a new hunting route?!”

The Shaman did not expect Shao Xuan to understand his plan so quickly. After all, the majority in the tribe never thought about how to start a new route. Even if they saw the map, they might not consider starting a new route.

But the Shaman was distracted for just a moment, he smiled and said, “Exactly.”

The number of people was growing in the tribe, but each time, only a limited number of them could go hunting. Although those warriors who had to handle the incidents of their domestic life or got injured were excluded from the list of the hunting groups, it was inevitable that some healthy people were also left behind.

It was too wasteful.

But it was not necessary to increase the number of people in the hunting group. The increase might have an adverse effect. In terms of hunting, the ancestors had recorded the drawbacks of too many people in the group.

The Shaman had been considering the design of a new route for a few years. Caesar's change gave him the resolve to do so.

If some cubs in the tribe grew up and were branded the profound craft successfully, they would become more helpful, whose power could not be underestimated.

It was very necessary to start a new route.

Therefore, the Shaman asked the head, the two team leaders, as well as several respected old warriors in the tribe to have a discussion with him.

If the Shaman did not mention the new route, the others would not adhere to it. Since the Shaman proposed it, the old warriors all felt very excited, because this would be a milestone for them.

They respected and admired the ancestors. But they were also obedient to the Shaman. Those summoned generally supported his idea.

A new route could not be designed overnight, and they must first finish the preparations. Most importantly, they must choose those who would be responsible to start the new route.

After discussion, they finally decided to start the program in three years. If everything went well, they might start it in a year. If something unpredictable happened in this process, it would be delayed. If it wasn't implemented within three years, the Shaman would cancel it.

As for the number of people who would be responsible for this program, they initially determined thirty was enough. The quality of the members was more important than the quantity. The quality here referred to the comprehensive strength.

After the initial decision, the two team leaders and old warriors went back

home and told this program to their offspring secretly. They hoped that their offspring would have better performance during the next two years, so that they would have more chance to be selected to start the new route.

They were not afraid of starting a new route. Almost everyone was very excited on hearing the news, especially those young and middle-aged warriors. They were now in good physical condition, so each time they went hunting, they had eye-catching performance. It was natural that they would do their best to become members of those who would start a new route.

They thought starting a new hunting route just like their ancestors was a great honor, which would go down in the tribe's history. How couldn't they be excited?

That was why recently, some people trained crazily in the training ground.

When the Shaman finished talking about his plan, he looked at Shao Xuan, who sat opposite him.

Shao Xuan's reaction was different from the others. As the Shaman knew, those who heard this news were all very excited, and several of them were even excited for several days, including the Chief. It was necessary for the Chief and the two team leaders to participate in this program.

However, why was Shao Xuan so calm? Was he pessimistic about this program?

The Shaman fixed his eyes on Shao Xuan, who was in deep thought. He was curious about what Shao Xuan was thinking about.

Shao Xuan kept silent for a while. Then he looked up to the Shaman, instead of asking about the program, he said, "Have you considered contacting the other tribes?"

Shao Xuan mentioned the "other tribes" without uncertainty. The Shaman knew that Shao Xuan was sure that the other tribes existed!

The Shaman had fixed his mind on the program, but at the moment, he looked very serious with sharp eyes, different from the person who used to be calm. Now the Shaman looked like a sword targeted at Shao Xuan.

At that moment, Shao Xuan almost directly jumped away. But he still stayed seated in the original place, with the same expression on his face, and looked at the Shaman.

The atmosphere remained tense for a long time, and then the Shaman gradually became gentle and looked like usual, but it was rare that he looked so serious.

The Shaman no longer talked about the new route, taking a deep breath, he stared at Shao Xuan's eyes, and said, "How do you know?"

Were there other people outside the tribe? People in the tribe had also discussed about this question privately in their spare time. They had heard rumors about the real existence of other people outside the tribe. Many in the tribe believed that only one tribe existed in the world, while some people believed that there were the other tribes, but the world was too large for them to travel around.

No more than five people in the tribe knew the right answer, and among them, the Shaman was undoubtedly clearest about it. After all, he could read and understand the Shaman Volumes that were passed down, and knew more than the others. However, he remembered he never showed any of the volumes about the other tribes to Shao Xuan!

"I have come from the cave near the the mountain foot. In that cave, there is a stone room whose walls had some drawings." Said Shao Xuan.

The Shaman felt his heart beating fast suddenly. He was not clear about whether there were drawings inside the cave. Someone once had been to the cave, but found nothing apart from some old and broken stone tools.

"The drawing is covered." Said Shao Xuan, and talked about how he found the drawing, "I recoated it with a layer of stone powder when I left the hole. Until now, no one else has seen it besides me."

The Shaman felt reassured, but he was also curious about the drawing in the cave at the mountain foot, for he did not remember the relevant records.

"What are the drawings?" The Shaman asked.

"There are hunting animals, farmland... and fine pottery..."

"And what else?" The Shaman continued asking.

Shao Xuan paused for a moment and said: "One day, we will return. The glory still exists. Long live the Flaming Horns tribe."

From the first word of this sentence that Shao Xuan said, the Shaman's hands began to tremble, which showed that he could not control his emotions.

“...Zan.” The Shaman said with a hoarse voice. In the ancient volumes, the third name in the ancestors’ list was “Zan”. The sentence Shao Xuan mentioned was also recorded.

He no longer felt excited about starting a new route, and said with bitterness on his face, “If we could go out...why would we start a new route!”

Shao Xuan looked at the the Shaman, whose eyes had turned red, he almost shed tears. He could not calm down in a short time.

After thinking about it, Shao Xuan did not tell him the records in his notebook.

When Shao Xuan walked out of the stone house, the Shaman was still in a low mood. Originally, Shao Xuan did not intend to tell him about the drawing in the cave. He did not expect a program for a new route, so he told him about the drawing after considering it.

It seemed that the Shaman also wanted to go out, many of our ancestors probably had also tried, but they failed.

Well, there was still a long way to go.

While walking, Shao Xuan suddenly heard a scream from above, and he looked up. Shao Xuan was so anxious that he might have thrown a spear at what made the noise.

At this moment, Chacha was holding a cub which was trained by someone in the tribe, which was crying scaredly.

“Chacha, come here!!”

---



# Chapter 132 - Enthusiasm Rises Anew

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

Many of the people raising the cubs almost lost all their patience in training. Every day, when they went to bed, they always considered cooking their cubs tomorrow.

But witnessing Caesar's change aroused some people's expectations, so they continued raising their cubs.

Said Shao Xuan the cubs must be trained frequently, so they spared some time to train them every day. If it was inconvenient to train their cubs in the tribe, they brought them to the training grounds.

In the woods, many cubs learned hunting skills while frolicking, such as searching, catching, throwing the prey, biting, and so on. And after being trained, some could give full play to their talents, overshadowing their companions, while others became more ordinary.

However, the cubs in the tribe were all talented.

When these people brought their cubs to the several hills around the training grounds, Chacha liked to cause trouble for them.

Lei was training his cub to sneak according to his orders. While he was training it, he heard a noise near him, which was caused by something flying rapidly in the air. He looked round and found his cub had disappeared.

He raised his head and saw the eagle that Shao Xuan kept, circling above him, holding his cub. No matter how he shouted and threatened the eagle, it did not put his cub down, and even flew higher. Then it flapped its wings and left.

Chacha flew back to the tribe with Lei's cub, and came across Shao Xuan who was going down the mountain.

Chacha never took the others' words seriously, but it did what Shao Xuan ordered it to do.

He did not throw it down directly, because if it did so, the cub would die if Shao Xuan failed to catch it. After descending, Chacha threw the cub in his claws to Shao Xuan.

Shao Xuan caught it, looked at it, and recognized that it was Lei's cub.

Shao Xuan did not know the type of this cub, but many people did not care about this in the tribe. Shao Xuan remembered that Lei named it Meng.

Meng, at first glance, looked a bit like a hyena, but if you carefully observed it, you would find that it differed much from a hyena. It had a longer and stronger jaw, and his mouth had sharp teeth. It was some kind of carnivore which Lei's group often encountered. In terms of its habits, they were similar to wolves.

Compared to the wolves, the animals in Meng's tribe had a more narrow and long body, with a larger skull. The adult animal had powerful muscles so they ran quite fast, therefore, the hunting group was often vigilant of them.

Lei seized the chance to catch Meng when they fought the group.

Although Meng was scared of the height, it still exposed its fangs to Chacha after being caught by Shao Xuan.

Shao Xuan checked Meng, and found it was not scratched by Chacha, and had no other injuries. He guessed Chacha just wanted to scare Lei and Meng, and was just causing mischief.

While he was checking, Lei caught up with them, tired and out of breath.

When Lei looked at Chacha, he was so angry that his veins were visible on his forehead.

Chacha could fly away directly, but Lei had to run over the mountains. There were twists and turns on his way, so it took him a lot of time to catch up with Chacha.

Seeing Lei, Shao Xuan put Meng on the ground, who immediately ran towards him, and then lay near Lei's leg, roaring towards Chacha, that was behind Shao Xuan.

"Well-trained." Said Shao Xuan.

Judging From Meng's behavior, he concluded it depended on Lei heavily, which meant it would possibly follow the orders, and even survive the first hunting mission.

Lei was in a different team, so he had opposing views of Shao Xuan under normal circumstances. However, because of training cubs, Lei held a better attitude towards Shao Xuan.

The one-year appointment of last winter now sounded like a joke. It was known to all that Shao Xuan found the very precious fire crystals during the first hunting mission after the ritual. Moreover, he carried many people in the hunting team out of danger. All of that could be considered hunting achievements. In this aspect, he overshadowed the others.

So, according to the one-year appointment last winter, everyone would keep their words and show their achievements this winter. But Shao Xuan needn't do so. Lei had no choice but to accept this result.

After checking Meng to make sure it was not hurt, Lei looked at Chacha, that was behind Shao Xuan.

"Ah-Xuan, you should pay more attention to it, for it has often caused trouble."

"OK, but you should also train Meng to be vigilant of flying birds." Said Shao Xuan.

Lei nodded, intending to take Meng to leave. He took two steps, stopped, and turned around. He asked Shao Xuan, "Do you know what the Chief and the team leaders are discussing in the Shaman's house?"

"You know?" Shao Xuan looked at Lei and asked. The elders in Lei's family had discussed the new route with the Shaman, so he should also have been told about this program.

"Of course I know, I can tell you, but you have to tell me something else in exchange for it." Said Lei.

"What do you want to know?" Shao Xuan asked.

"I want to know the reason of Caesar's change in detail." Said Lei with expectations, his eyes glistening. Between the regular beasts and the ferocious

beasts, he naturally preferred the ferocious beasts, so he wished Meng to become a ferocious beast in the future...

“You don’t need to tell me what they discuss. As for what you want to know, wait for a few days and you will know.” Said Shao Xuan, and then made a gesture. Chacha immediately flew up, and followed him down the mountain.

Seeing Shao Xuan and his eagle leave, Lei frowned.

Did Ah-Xuan know the program? But only a very small number of people know that, and only close relatives were told. Why did the Shaman tell him?

As for the reason for Caesar’s change, he answered “You will know it in a few days.” What did he mean?

Three days later, the Shaman distributed 100 copies of the volumes which recorded the profound craft and the hunting animals kept by the ancestors. Not every household in the mountain could get one copy, but at least several could share one.

The 100 copies triggered off a huge wave of discussion in this peaceful tribe.

Training cubs even originated from the ancestors?

The ancestors were so capable!

As well as magical profound craft, related to Caesar's change into a ferocious beast?

The Shaman could really do anything!

.....

The Shaman did not tell them how Caesar had changed into a ferocious beast, or who had branded him. But according to the records in the volume, only the Shaman could use the craft. Everyone naturally assumed that it was the Shaman that had performed it on Caesar, that caused such a change in him.

When the Shaman distributed these volumes, he also said, if in the tribe a beast was comparable to a hunting animal, he would perform the craft on it.

The Shaman cooked a pie for everyone, and explained how to eat it, and how to eat more of it depended on each of themselves.

The enthusiasm of those who had gotten impatient aroused again. They even caught a few more cubs when hunting. They knocked them unconscious, tied them up, and brought them back to the tribe. Then they specifically taught them the hunting skills. Some people did not intend to raise cubs, but the volumes distributed by the Shaman generated their enthusiasm.

In a short time, the number of cubs that had plummeted, gradually grew again, but most of them still ended up in the pot.

One year later.

It seemed the earliest group of cubs brought back to the tribe had matured. They might not be adults, but most of the beasts at this age in the woods were involved in hunting, they went hunting alone or with their relatives. And at this time, some in the hunting group began to ask the group leaders for permission to bring their own beasts to go hunting.

In their view, their beasts had been so strong, that in the tribe they could often catch some stone rats, and they were very obedient. What's more, they could make fierce attacks... These warriors thought their beasts were much better than Caesar.

Not just one or two warriors, but several of them had such an idea.

They had kept their beasts for nearly two years. It had cost them a lot to raise these cubs that had grown so strong now. It was time for them to go hunting.

The Shaman looked at the proposals handed in by the team leaders and did not reject them, but told them what should be paid attention to, which Shao Xuan had put forward.

After obtaining permission from the Shaman, the Chief and the team leaders,

with great pride, several warriors strode across the Path of Glory with their beasts.

However, when the hunting team came back again, almost none of their beasts came with them.

Five beasts set out with them, but only one returned, which was Lei's Meng.

Meng survived, but it received many wounds. Lei had witnessed Caesar's injuries after going hunting, so he felt reassured. Anyway, as the only beast that could come back, Meng outperformed the other four.

Such a result worried some people a lot, and they began to question whether their beasts could come back safely in the future.

Two of the four beasts that did not come back lost control while hunting the prey. They did not obey the orders, and even launched an attack on the members of the hunting group. As a result, these beasts were killed on the spot.

As for the other two, one was kicked by the prey on the head, so it took its last breath soon after. The other ran away and could not be stopped.

This result made those who also intended to go hunting with their beasts hesitate to do so. They thought they had to strengthen the training of their beasts' dependence and self-control, which Shao Xuan had reminded them to pay attention to.

In the following few hunting missions, besides Meng, who was kept by Lei, unexpectedly several other beasts returned safely. Which included Liao, Mo Er's cave lion, Si Ya, Mao's fur-less boar, and the beasts raised by Ah-Yang and Ah-Guang.

Ah-Yang and Ah-Guang had also caught two animals during the hunting. Ah-Yang brought back a cub which looked like a hyena, and he called it An.

The one brought back by Ah-Guang was a big bird egg at the beginning, which was stolen from a nest. She always wanted to keep a flying bird like Chacha, but when she hatched the egg following Shao Xuan's instruction, she found that this bird could not fly. It was a wingless bird, similar to the phorusrhacos. But she kept raising it instead of cooking it, and named it Jing.

After a year, the two animals kept by Ah-Yang and Ah-Guang followed the hunting group out hunting, and both had good performance in general, which made Mai very happy.



---

# Chapter 133 - The Nine Beasts

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

According to the ancient volumes, each hunting animal branded by the profound craft was carefully selected. But now, in the tribe, less than ten beasts met the requirements.

The Shaman would like to perform the craft on them as soon as possible, because the volumes told him that if they were branded by the craft in their early stages, the success rate and the chance of growing into the ferocious beasts would be higher. If they were branded by the craft after a few years or several decades, there would be little room for their growth, even if the craft worked.

But in accordance with the old teaching, he must make sure that they met the requirements, which made him hesitate over whether to perform the craft on them.

Therefore, the Shaman asked Shao Xuan to record the training, life, and performance of the first batch of beasts during the hunt. Up to now, the Shaman had written nine beasts' names on his animal skin parchment.

Shao Xuan handed in the recent records, and was waiting for the Shaman's comments. Whether to brand them totally depended on the Shaman.

Those selected would be the first batch of beasts to be branded by the craft in the tribe. Shao Xuan couldn't make this decision by himself.

Caesar and the others to be branded by Shaman would become nine beasts with a special status in the tribe, as long as the craft worked.

These nine beasts ranged from birds, beasts and to turtles; namely, three categories of beasts: those living in the sky, on the land, and in the water.

However, only time could tell their future growth, and whether they would become the best.

Looking at the animal skin roll handed in by Shao Xuan for about half an hour, the Shaman sighed and said, "They seem very good, but I still feel worried."

"What do you mean?"

The Shaman looked at Shao Xuan, and slowly said, "individually, they have good performance, but how about if they are together?"

The Shaman did not expect them to cooperate fully with each other. But he at least had to make sure that when put together, they would not fight. During the hunt, many beasts might get in conflict. If they did not get along well, there would be even greater conflicts after being branded by the craft. That would be simply dangerous for the hunting group.

Shao Xuan was silent for a while, and said, "So, do you mean they should be put together in advance?"

"Yes."

The Shaman pointed at the names on the roll. Among these nine beasts, two would not be put together with the others. He only meant the other seven to be put together.

The two that did not need to cooperate with others were the turtle staying in the medicine house, and the white falcon brought back by Gui He from the green land. It was this falcon that helped Gui He's group get more prey during the hunting than Ta's. But Gui He did not tell everyone about his falcon until he

brought it back to the tribe.

They were two exceptions, but besides them, the remaining seven had to learn to cooperate with each other.

The seven names made Shao Xuan sigh silently, and questioned in his mind, “How to get them together?”

These seven made up a group totally different from what Shao Xuan had imagined. This group included various kinds of beasts, and could be compared to a mishmash army in the modern times. None of them were similar species, so their tempers were also strange and different.

Shao Xuan stayed with the Shaman to discuss with him for a long time, and then left with a animal skin volume written by the Shaman, which was as important as a “decree”. He walked out of the stone house to inform those who kept the beasts, whose names were written down by the Shaman.

Yesterday, Gui He’s hunting team had returned, and Ta’s group would set out tomorrow, so now they were all in the tribe. Shao Xuan had to inform them one by one.

First, he visited Mao.

When he came to the door of the team leader, he found no one there. There was no noise in the house, so Shao Xuan cried out, “Si Ya!”

Bang!

A quite strong “bald boar” broke through the wall.

Shao Xuan, “...”

The sight of the big hole in the stone wall made Shao Xuan decide to leave as soon as he told Mao the news. Otherwise Ta would get furious if he saw the hole.

Now, Si Ya had four fangs, so it looked quite capable, but it was still called “bald boar”.

After Si Ya came out through the wall, Mao came out with a sour face, and scolded Shao Xuan, “Why did you call it?!”

“Why?” Shao Xuan asked.

“He was sleeping just now, and probably dreaming. Tomorrow it will go hunting, so it is excited.” Said Mao, rubbing his face hard, “Tell me what you want to say. I have to hurry to repair the wall before my father comes back.

Otherwise he will beat me because of it.”

Most of the houses on the mountain were made of stones. Si Ya was quite emotional, just like a young man. He could get excited easily. Once he got excited, the house would be damaged. Ta did not allow it to live in the house, but when Ta was out, it squeezed into the house. So the door had been enlarged several times.

Without delay, Shao Xuan passed the Shaman’s “decree” to him and said, “Read it.”

Originally he was thinking about how to fix the wall, but after reading the animal skin volume, he got excited and could not wait to set out immediately. According to the volume, if the result was satisfactory, the Shaman would choose the best beasts to perform the craft on.

Having waited for two years, he could finally learn more about the legendary profound craft, so how could he not get excited?

“When will we go?” Mao asked hurriedly.

“You won’t go with your beast tomorrow, but you can bring your beast for the next hunt.” Said Shao Xuan.

Mao was disappointed, but it did not take long before he could go hunting with Si Ya. In addition, he had more time to train it for the next hunt, so that next time would be amazing! Those excelling beasts that the Shaman mentioned, certainly included Si Ya!

Ignoring the excited Mao, Shao Xuan continued to inform other people. He left for Lei's house, up in the mountain, for Meng was also included in the list.

After informing Mao and Lei, he went to the mountainside to tell Mo Er.

When Shao Xuan arrived there, Liao, the cave lion, was lazily lying at the door and rubbing the ground. After finishing hunting, it enjoyed big meals and then would have a good sleep for a few days.

Since Liao was raised in the tribe, many people were less afraid of cave lions.

Seeing Shao Xuan, Liao, who was rolling at the door and licking its claws, waved its tail to knock on the door.

Soon, Mo Er came to open the door, it seemed that he just woke up. In the past, when he finished a hunting mission, he would still feel energetic after returning to the tribe. But now, going hunting with Liao made him physically and mentally exhausted, but he got more prey. That was because Liao's temper was not as good as that of Caesar. He had to pay a lot of attention to it.

"What is up?" Mo Er yawned, giving the cave lion a kick.

Glancing at the cave lion lying on the ground and rolling lazily, Shao Xuan did not feel surprised. He handed the "decree" to Mo Er and told him what he had told Mao.

Reading the animal skin volume, Mo Er felt excited. He no longer felt sleepy, but breathed with haste.

"I get it, I'll train it!"

Leaving Mo Er's house, Shao Xuan set out to the Mai and Qiao's home to tell Ah-Yang and Ah-Guang about this matter, and at the same time told Mai in detail that his group was chosen to be the first one to go hunting with this

“mishmash army”.

When Shao Xuan was talking with Mai and Qiao, An and Jing were fighting in the expanded yard. These two did not match their elegant names. Ah-Yang and Ah-Guang were cheering them up.

“An, attack it from the back! Avoid its claws!”

“Ah-Jing, pat it, and peck it. That is right.”

An was an animal that looked like a hyena, but had hoofs. Its feet made you assume it was a herbivore, but its fangs showed you that it was a carnivore. On the whole, it looked like a sheep wrapped in wolf’s skin, but the wolf skin did not cover its feet. It was in fact a fierce beast with a peaceful name.

Shao Xuan admired Jing a lot, for its head could work as a hoe. When Jing ran up, it could fiercely hit the prey, and even sometimes kill it with a peck. It was completely different from Chacha.

After informing them one by one, Shao Xuan went home to ready up the tools for tomorrow's hunting.

Since the end of last year, Shao Xuan had gone hunting with Chacha, and he had lived up to expectations. He had not made any trouble, but caught a cub from the deer herd without an order from the hunting group. Later, the deer became all alert when they saw a figure in the sky. The first time, Chacha could catch one of them due to their negligence, but after that they became vigilant, so it was difficult for him to succeed again.



After more than twenty days, Ta went hunting with his group and returned. As soon as he returned, Gui He's group set out, but this time, Mo Er and Lei were left in the tribe to receive training with Shao Xuan, Mao, Ah-Yang and Ah-Guang.

As what Shao Xuan had imagined, when put together, these seven fought for a small stone rat for half a day, never mind cooperation.

Fortunately, as a ferocious beast, Caesar saw their fierce fight, and then went to end their fight.

People in the tribe often heard roars from the training ground. In the beginning they were nervous, but soon, they got used to it, and could even tell which beast was roaring.

Although these seven did not cooperate well in the beginning, their masters played an important role.

Thanks to their guidance and Caesar's violent suppression, five days later, they finally no longer fought.

Ten days later, they learned the initial cooperation.

Fifteen days later, their cooperation was further increased.

Twenty days later, their cooperation nearly satisfied Shao Xuan.

The Shaman did not expect them to cooperate with one another that well, for they after all might go hunting alone. But he intended to test their mind in this way. As long as they obeyed the orders during the whole process and returned safely, the Shaman would immediately perform the craft on them.

When they set out, those who were not on patrol in the tribe all gathered on both sides of the Path of Glory to watch them.

In this team, those eye catching beasts aroused heated discussion.

Mai felt very stressed out, for those beasts that they had been vigilant of a few years ago, now joined their group.

Lang Ga touched his neck, for behind him was the phorusrhacos kept by Ah-Guang. He was afraid of its peck, for his fragile neck could not stand a peck.

The Shaman stood at the top of the mountain, looking at the hunting team walking down. He paid respects to the fire pit, in the hope for the ancestors' blessing, so that everyone in the group would come back safely.

The number of the first batch of cubs was at least a hundred, but today, only a few were left and selected. So hard to select!

Although the Shaman thought they were certainly inferior to the hunting animals kept by the ancestors, he believed they were not too inferior... Right?

---

# Chapter 134 - Cooperation

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

The group was large, and the warriors in this group were very curious about the beasts that accompanied them.

When Caesar had accompanied the group for the first time, everyone had been nervous, but now they became used to him. This time, with so many beasts in the group, they showed off with pride, for they were the first group to go hunting with so many beasts.

However, after climbing over the mountain, and reaching the first holdout, they found that it was not good for them to have so many beasts accompany them, because they got much less prey.

Shao Xuan did not put them together at once, but divided them into two groups, one led by Mai and the other led by Qiao. Mao, Mo Er and Lei, with their own beasts, were in Mai's group. Ah-Yang and Ah-Guang were in Qiao's group.

As for Shao Xuan, his priority was to record the performance of these beasts, and hand in the records to the Shaman.

So, to some extent, Shao Xuan worked as a class teacher who examined the students on their performance, and this group of “primary school students” would make every effort to give outstanding performance.

The first arrival to this strange place made them over cautious at the beginning, but after a few days, they adjusted themselves and felt free to hunt.

Three days later, when the hunting group returned to the cave, Shao Xuan wrote down in the animal skin roll, and the others glanced at it, for they wanted to know the results. However, Shao Xuan did not show them, and even if he showed them, they would not understand.

Since they could not read the records, they had to ask Shao Xuan indirectly.

“Brother Xuan, what do you think of our performance?” Ah-Yang and Ah-Guang were sent to inquire from him.

“Not bad.” Shao Xuan did not raise his head, but continued to write down some symbols in the animal skin roll, which were not understandable for other people.

What did he mean by saying “not bad”? Was he satisfied or dissatisfied?

They looked at each other for a while.

“I think we can challenge ourselves.” Then said Lei, the eldest among them.

It was not difficult for them to catch the bow beasts, giant tapirs, and giant-antler deers every day. The majority of the warriors in the tribe believed a serious injury proved the difficulty of the hunting mission and their strength. Since this result would be shown to the Shaman, they had to work hard to seek more achievements. It was not a big deal to get injured.

“What do you want to do, catch the mega-antler deer in the giant-antler deer herd?” Mao said ironically.

Lei shook his head and said, “The number of mega-antlers deer is so huge that it is too difficult to do so.”

“I heard there is a new Thorn Black Wind in the lake.”

“It only comes out at night.”

“What do you want to hunt?”

“A rhinoceros? ”

“The other beasts!” Ah-Yang and Ah-Guang also joined in the discussion.

“There is a giant bear near the tar pit!”

...

They argued about which one they should challenge to catch.

The quarrel in the cave made Shao Xuan feel a headache. He waved his hand and said to those arguing, “Shut up, and keep quiet.”

They became silent at once, but soon, Shao Xuan felt something wrong. He looked up and saw there was a huge beak coming towards him.

Shao Xuan: “...”

He chased away the large-headed bird, and said, “I am not talking about you, and you go away too.”

According to the observations of these past days, Shao Xuan analyzed the pros and cons of the beasts they had just discussed. Shao Xuan said, “If you really want to challenge yourselves, you can try to catch that bear, but you have to have a plan. There is only meaning for those who live.”

He had to remind them of what should be paid attention to. Otherwise, they would be too overconfident that they would lose their lives due to overestimating themselves, and Shao Xuan would have difficulty in reporting their deaths to the Shaman.

To catch the giant bear, they had to cooperate. Only one or two could not defeat the bear, for it was a ferocious beast.

The two animals kept by Ah-Yang and Ah-Guang grew up together while continuously fighting with each other. After growing bigger, they still fought with each other at home, but cooperated to defeat the external enemies. They had a tacit understanding of each other. And they also learned self-protection.

Before leaving the tribe, the phorusrhacos kept by Ah-Guang had learned to chase the prey from one side rather than in the rear, for it would get a kick easily if it was in the rear. The beast raised by Ah-Yang also learned to be more flexible in avoiding attacks. This was why these two outperformed the other

beasts in the tribe. Their cooperation in the following few days was obviously successful.

Two days later, they left for the tar pit together.

To help them, Mai and Qiao did not take the others to go hunting, but were hidden in the surrounding in case of accidents. This way, they could come out and help them immediately.

Shao Xuan let Caesar help them and take action if necessary.

“Ah-Xuan, why don’t you help them?” Lang Ga asked Shao Xuan, who hid himself in another tree.

“Everything depends on them.” Said Shao Xuan. This was the intention of the Shaman. He asked Shao Xuan to pay attention to them, and help them with Caesar if necessary.

Thinking of the talk with the Shaman, Shao Xuan sighed and whispered to himself, “This old liar is always asking me to do many things.”

“What?” Lang Ga was just paying attention to what was happening over there, and did not hear what Shao Xuan had said.

“Nothing, I said they did well today.”

When Shao Xuan and Lang Ga were talking, Chacha called out in the sky, which meant that they had started taking actions.



In terms of strength, they were outperformed, and would be defeated even in a group fight, so they had to rely on tactics to defeat it. According to their tactics, they would provoke the giant bear, lead it to the tar pit, and then knock it down.

Shao Xuan could not see what was happening in the woods from his position, but near the place where the bear was active, Mai and the others were on the guard. They would whistle if something wrong happened.

After a while, Shao Xuan heard a loud roar, and felt the trees next to him shaking. Soon, the sound of footsteps burst out. They were heavy, but fast steps, so that you could not identify them if you didn't pay attention.

Such loud and fast footsteps were mixed with a lot of other sounds of footsteps, such as the sound made by hoofs.

Whiz!

A figure rushed out, it was the beast raised by Ah-Yang.

It was followed by the phorusrhacos and Lei's Meng.

These three rushed out of the woods, and then ran in three different directions.

The moment the giant bear almost caught up with his prey, he paused. And then he continued to chase the phorusrhacos, but unfortunately there was still a small distance.

With big feet, the phorusrhacos could still run very fast through the tar pit area. After running into the area, it fiercely moved its jaw, its big mouth was hollow, so when it closed its mouth, it would make a loud smacking sound.

Every time when it got excited, it made such a noise.

At the moment, even those who did not know about this kind of animal, could feel it was laughing at the giant bear, let alone the bear itself.

The giant bear lingered on the edge of the tar pit area, and roared towards the beasts in the area. The fact that every time the people or the beasts it

chased after would go there made it furious. But it could do nothing but only walk on the edge to threaten them. Those that broke into its territory and even boldly ate its food should be bitten to death!

After walking for a while, the bear felt bored and intended to leave. At this moment, a cave lion appeared. Although the cave lion was very small in its eyes, it hated it a lot, for the cave lions often snatched food away from it. It thought all lion caves were damnable!

The giant bear rushed to it, roaring. Unexpectedly, just like the big-mouth bird, the cave lion ran into the tar pit area, but did not get stuck.

A loud roar was heard.

The giant bear stood up, hoping to frighten them with a roar and look down on this group of dregs that always ran away!

Every time when the bear chased the hunting group to this place, this giant bear would stand straight to show its strength, and kept roaring as if he would destroy the whole forest.

Lei, Mao, and Mo Er entered the tar pit area from another path. Standing there, they threw stones to the bear to further irritate it, rather than hurt it.

Chacha also joined them in attracting the attention of the giant bear, so that it would focus on what happened in front or above him.

And when the bear was roaring at those in the tar pit, a figure appeared quietly behind it, and and quietly crept closer.

When there was a suitable distance between them, it instantly accelerated towards the bear.

The furious bear did not expect there to be a daring beast behind it. It was used to standing next to the pit to roar at the hiding prey, but this time, it got trapped.

Its roar concealed the sounds around. When it felt the ground shaking, it knew something behind it was rushing to it. It turned around but had no time to run away, so its belly suffered a hit.

In spite of the hit, it struck the beast that rushed against it with its claw.

Si Ya was hit away by the bear, and rolled on the ground for a long distance.

The bear paid full attention to Si Ya and tried to keep the balance, when a gray figure flashed close. It was struck again. The strike was close to its chest, and more powerful.

It was roaring again.

It was a roar of anxiety and fear. It knew where he would fall, and would lose its life in the pit, like the beasts and the ferocious beasts in the woods.

Bang!

The huge figure smashed into the tar pit, splashing countless sticky tar.

Seeing it falling into the pit, everyone felt relieved.

Mao ran out to check the wounds on Si Ya. The hit of the bear's palm left Si Ya a few deep marks, but for him, the injury was not so serious.

"Nothing serious, let it go back to rest for some time. The wound will heal up soon, for the marks were not deep." Said Mai after he looked at it.

Si Ya still felt faint, and fell to the ground, groaning. As the strongest one among the several beasts, it never suffered such a slap.

None of them got serious injuries, and they then looked at the bear in the tar pit. Everyone still had a lingering fear.

Thanks to Caesar's strike, the bear fell into the tar pit directly. Otherwise Si Ya might have been killed by the bear.

They brought grass rope with them. If Si Ya had accidentally rushed into the tar pit, they would have used the rope to save it. Unexpectedly, the bear looked bulky, but was very flexible.

This made everyone understand that sometimes the plan was only something ideal, and something unexpected could also happen.

“We should be more cautious while making a plan in the future.” Said Shao Xuan.

“Yes.” The others agreed.

Looking at the bear gradually falling down, Mai told everyone to leave, for it was no use staying here.

---

# Chapter 135 - The Only Exception

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

After the first teamwork, the following teamwork went smoothly. At the same time, these young warriors became more cautious.

Shao Xuan did not join them, sometimes he let Caesar go with them but did not give him any other orders.

“Are you ignoring Caesar?” Lang Ga was curious and asked him. Since the hunt of the huge bear, Shao Xuan had let Caesar take actions freely.

“I am developing his independence. Caesar is very smart, and sometimes, too much attention doesn’t help.” Said Shao Xuan.

“Don’t you often tell them to develop their beasts’ dependence? Why do you mention independence now?”

“We should adopt different ways to solve problems.” Shao Xuan replied.

Lang Ga did not understand it and gave up thinking about it. Then he went to have a look at what they were hunting.

Standing in the tree, Shao Xuan looked at the narrow stream in front of the

tree. Some fallen leaves and small sticks were floating on the stream.

The ancient people observed the fallen leaves and gained the idea to make a boat. They found the wood floating on the water, so they knew how to make a boat.

In fact, it was not as difficult to build a boat as Shao Xuan had imagined. What he needed was just a trunk.

In the forest, there were many sturdy trees, and a trunk could be changed into a canoe.

But he still needed to carefully select a suitable tree type.

...

Their beasts did not draw the attention of those high-level ferocious beasts in the woods that occupied some places as their respective territories. For them, they were just a few small beasts, so they did not pay any attention to them.

Mai led his hunting group, as well as a few beasts, travelling smoothly from the first location to the third, in spite of some small troubles. For the hunting group, this was a novel trip.

A cry was suddenly heard.

An eagle was screaming in the air.

Shao Xuan looked up and Chacha intended to fly to other places.

When they reached the third location, they had already spent two thirds of the hunting time, so the hunting group would not go any further. Moreover, they knew nothing about the terrain and species there. So in general, they would stay here for a few days, and then turn around and go back.

However, it seemed that Chacha wanted to continue flying further. If Shao Xuan had not been here, it would have flown away.

In the sky, Chacha's unique flying routine told Shao Xuan that he wanted to go there. From the first location to the third, Chacha had manifested his strong desire to fly in that direction.

"Uncle Mai, do you know what that place is?" Shao Xuan pointed in the direction Chacha wanted to fly at, and asked.

Mai thought about it for a while and shook his head. He said, "Some old warriors have mentioned it, but I do not remember. But I know it is not a place where we can go. That place is called the Severing Land."

"Severing Land?"

"Maybe." Mai replied with uncertainty. He really could not remember much of it, he had just heard some old warriors say they couldn't go there when he was young.

Since the ancestors stopped here and did not move forward, they had their reasons. Because of their trust in the ancestors, each group leader stopped here, and would not continue to onward. Even if they went further, they did not go in that direction.

"Don't go there." Mai stared at Shao Xuan, and asked him to make a promise.

Shao Xuan paused for a moment, then he nodded and said, "OK, I understand. We won't go there."

Hearing Shao Xuan's promise, Mai finally smiled, looked at the sky, waved to Shao Xuan, and said, "It is time to go back."

Shao Xuan whistled, and then made a gesture to Chacha, who was flying in the air.

Another cry was heard.

Chacha was unwilling to return, so he circled the original place, before finally following Shao Xuan back to the third holdout. Due to his bad mood, it fought with an unknown bird on the way and was defeated. The unknown bird only suffered slight injury, but Chacha was badly hurt, and was even stripped of



some feathers.

He was feeling even worse.

Shao Xuan was comforting him, while applying a drug to his wounds.

“When I go back, I will ask the Shaman what that place is. If we can go there, I will take you there.”

As the day to return was approaching, those who went hunting with their beasts began to feel worried. Although they thought their beasts had a good performance, which did not fight, or cause any big trouble to the group, and also helped with hunting a lot of prey, but only the animal skin roll written by Shao Xuan would be read by the Shaman.

Lei was particularly worried, because he had had a conflict with Shao Xuan. He was afraid that Shao Xuan still remembered their conflict. It occurred to him that when he got angry, following the others' behavior, Lei dragged out a ferocious beast. This ferocious beasts level was not high, but it was the only ferocious beast caught by him and Meng. Until now, if he went hunting alone, he could only catch a beast.

Shao Xuan looked at the prey in front of him and did not know what to say for a long time.

He was obviously bribing me!

He thought quite a lot.

The others also followed Lei and dragged their prey to Shao Xuan.

The phorusrhacos kept by Ah-Guang moved its big feet to come in front of Shao Xuan. It shook its neck, and then lowered its head to spit out a bone in front of Shao Xuan.

Shao Xuan: "..."

Shao Xuan looked a little bad, so Ah-Yang and Ah-Guang hurriedly pulled away the phorusrhacos.

Shao Xuan did not record the bribes in the animal skin roll, but when he returned to the tribe, he reported to the Shaman that those beasts were payment for his hard work.

The Shaman did not care about this, and he took the animal skin roll that Shao Xuan passed him. He continuously studied it for three days.

Lei, Mao, Ah-Yang and Ah-Guang did not know Shao Xuan took records in the form of the Shaman Volume, and also drew several pictures, which depicted the scene of these beasts hunting the prey.

Their advantages, disadvantages, and tempers were all recorded in words and pictures in the volume, so Shao Xuan did not need to explain it.

After the first hunt, the Shaman did not make the final decision immediately.

The Shaman arranged that they would undertake several hunting missions. These beasts still stayed in the same hunting group, but not in Mai's group. Their routes were different for different missions.

Shao Xuan obeyed the Shaman's order to follow them one by one. He followed several other hunting groups along their hunting routes, so he generally learned about the distribution of species along each hunting group's hunting routes.

After each hunting mission, Shao Xuan also painted a map with more details, on which the general locations of the beasts, ferocious beasts, herbs, huge trees

were marked. Shao Xuan only told these to the Shaman, even Old Ke did not know.

Shao Xuan brought Caesar and Chacha along the other hunting groups along their routes. Once, after arriving at the third location, Chacha again showed his strong desire to fly in that direction. Since then, it no longer did so.

Shao Xuan asked the Shaman why this happened. The Shaman did not give a definitive answer, but he said he would read the Shaman Volumes left by the ancestors to find whether there was a detailed record.

Shao Xuan would not take Chacha to that place until he was clear of the situation there, for nobody knew that place and whether they could come back safely.

The Shaman had talked to those who raised the beasts, including Lei and Mao, so they tried to hunt more food before winter.

This winter, the Shaman would perform the craft on several beasts one by one, except Caesar and Chacha. He asked Shao Xuan to be present, if he could not finish the ritual, Shao Xuan could help him. And as the next Shaman, Gui Ze was also asked to be present.

He would perform the craft next to the flame pit. In order to ensure that He would have enough spiritual strength, Shao Xuan was responsible for throwing a fire crystal into the flame pit.

It was a snowy day, but near the pit, there was not a snowflake or a water drop. Compared to the other places on the mountain, the place next to the flame pit was like a big stove.

Shao Xuan put a piece of fire crystal into the flame pit, and watched the fiery red energy drift in the direction of the Shaman, as well as himself. Gui Ze's power was not awoken, so she could not absorb the energy of the fire crystal.

"Let's start." Said the Shaman.

The first one brought here was Lei's "Meng". The person who brought Meng here left immediately, and Lei could not stay here. They waited in another stone house.

Next to the flame pit, at the top of the mountain, there were only 3 people; namely the Shaman, Shao Xuan and Gui Ze.

Sitting on the animal skin blanket and looking at the beast that was lying down but still higher than him, he reached out.

The familiar Flaming Horns totem appeared in the Shaman's palm, the blue totem gradually formed, but he spent more time on this than Shao Xuan. When the totem completely formed, the Shaman had been sweating, but fortunately, his energy could be quickly recovered by the fire crystal.

This time, the Shaman did not need to be vigilant like Shao Xuan, who had to keep a wary eye on the surrounding area that night. It was very safe here.

He did almost the same as what Shao Xuan had done, but after the formation of the totem, it took him more time to brand it on the beast. Fortunately, in the end he succeeded in branding the whole totem on the beast before it scattered.

When he finished branding, he was so exhausted that he fell back. If Shao Xuan responded slowly and failed to catch him, he would've fallen down directly on the stone near the flame pit.

After the first completion of the craft, the Shaman found that he could only perform the craft for one beast at a time. It would take him more time to perform it on seven beasts, for he had to rest for a few days after one ritual.

When he finished the ritual for the last beast, half of the winter time had almost flown by.

According to the ancient volumes, the success rate of the ritual for the hunting animal was fifty percent, so the Shaman did not expect the craft to work on each beast. But it turned out that the ritual for these seven was successful! Although, when he branded the totem on four, the totem almost scattered, but in the end, it quickly coagulated so he finished the branding.

The seven beasts were also in good condition.

This winter was over, and the seven beasts grew a lot, but their change was not as dramatic as that of Caesar. It was in line with the records in the animal skin volumes passed down by the ancestors, which is a gradual and moderate process.

At the same time, Chacha became listless all day.

It was abnormal for Chacha, that used to be energetic most of the time. Was it the only exception among the nine beasts in the tribe?

But the Shaman had said he would not perform the craft on him. That was not because he did not want to do so, but he could not. Shao Xuan had tried once, but he had failed.

The Shaman also said that Chacha was a real giant mountain eagle, and this kind of eagle had its own source of power.

---

# Chapter 136 - The Severing Land

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

In the winter, the seven beasts that the Shaman had branded gradually began to change. Their size and appearance changed.

Before the winter, the Shaman had reminded them to prepare some food, but the seven beasts grew bigger and had larger appetite, so the food was not enough for them. After all, with the promotion of their level, their demand for energy would also increase, like intermediate and senior totem warriors for whom the ordinary beast meat could not provide enough energy.

Until the end of the winter, each of the seven beasts became as skinny as Caesar when he had just been branded, even though the beasts were raised well. Even the chunky Si Ya lost weight.

After the winter, the most important ritual ceremony would be performed as usual.

According to the ancient volumes, the beasts that were successfully branded could participate in the sacrifice ritual because the fire would no longer keep them away.

Then on the day of the ritual, except Chacha, the other eight were brought to the top of the mountain, and they stood near the flame pit.

Participation in rituals meant that they are officially a member of the tribe.

This was a very strange picture. Over the past hundreds of years, it was the first time that men and beasts participated in the ritual ceremony.

Everyone was very excited, because they were lucky enough to witness such a great event that their ancestors also witnessed!

After the ritual, the Shaman made detailed records in the form of a Shaman Volume. This was a great achievement worth remembering since he took the position, so he should pass it down from one generation to another.

In contrast, left at home to avoid the flame, Chacha was lonely. Although he still had a good appetite, he had a much lower spirit.

After the ritual, the coldness of the winter had gradually vanished. From the top to the foot of the mountain, many animals became active again.

A few days before the first hunting mission, the branded beasts often went down the mountain.

When they were small, they were often bullied by Chacha. Each of them was caught by him, and then pull around in the sky, except for the falcon raised by Gui He and the turtle kept by Gui Ze.

Now, they became ferocious beasts, or close to the extent of ferocious beasts, so they were not afraid of Chacha. If he couldn't fly, they probably would have taken revenge on him.

Fortunately, Caesar prevented them from provoking Chacha.

Caesar was originally inferior to these beast races. Even in the wolf species, he belonged to a relatively weak group, not as strong as the others.

But after being branded, they all grew into ferocious beasts, but they were much weaker than Caesar; including Liao, the cave lion, and Mao's Si Ya. That was why they were afraid of annoying Caesar.

Chacha still felt depressed in his nest, for those once bullied by him now became strong.



Shao Xuan was also helpless with this situation.

After the Shaman finished disciplining a batch of warriors who were newly awakened, Shao Xuan went up the mountain to have a talk with the Shaman.

“I plan to take Chacha there during this hunt.” Said Shao Xuan who was sitting opposite the Shaman.

The Shaman knew the place Shao Xuan was referring to. Hearing his intention, he was silent for a while, and then entered a room to take out a skin reel. He handed it to Shao Xuan and said, “This is the volume in which the ancestors recorded the place.”

Last year, after Shao Xuan mentioned Chacha’s condition to him, he carefully read the volumes, and extracted some relevant records.

Shao Xuan took the animal skin volume, and read the text records.

These were only ordinary text records, and were obviously based on the others’ retelling, for the meaning was not so clear.

The volume also mentioned the “Severing Land” that Mai had told him of.

When the ancestors had started the hunting route, they had been blocked by some thorny plants. But when they stood high, they could see the distant mountains, but due to the plants, they did not move forward.

So the ancestors called it the “Severing Land”, for it cut off the roads between the mountains so no one could go there.

And the volume also mentioned something interesting.

The Shaman had said Chacha was a giant mountain eagle. These eagles had their own beliefs and source of power, which Shao Xuan did not understand. This volume also mentioned the following.

It was said the power of the giant mountain eagle came from the abyss of the snow-capped mountain, and its top and bottom could not be seen. It was always covered with the snow and ice. It was also called the Eagle Mountain.

Ao, the Chief, had said that the giant mountain eagle came from the Eagle Mountain, but now it didn’t seem to be exactly correct. The Eagle Mountain

was the source of their power, but whether it was their birth place had not yet been concluded.

Long long ago, the ancestors had only heard of the legend of the giant mountain eagle, but never seen them. Some people said that the mountain was the eagles' cemetery, while some said that it was the eagle's birth land.

There were not that many recordings in the volume, so Shao Xuan soon finished reading.

"Is it the Eagle Mountain where Chacha wants to go?" Shao Xuan felt puzzled and said.

"Maybe." Said the Shaman.

Considering for a moment, Shao Xuan said: "I still intend to take him there to take a look."

The Shaman looked at Shao Xuan, and was silent for a moment. Then he said, "It is very dangerous. You may not be able to return."

“I know.” Shao Xuan had made the decision, and would not change his mind. “Please tell Uncle Mai about this.” He added.

The Shaman gave up persuading him out of this decision, and just let out a low sigh.

Shao Xuan knew he accepted his decision. Then he grinned, saluted him, and said, “Don’t worry, I will come back safely.”

The Shaman felt his eyelids twitch, and then waved his hand helplessly to let Shao Xuan go out at once.

In the following first hunting of this year, with the help of several ferocious beasts, Ta and the five group leaders would try to give good performance.

Mai was talking about the upcoming hunt with Qiao excitedly, and then he heard the message brought by Shao Xuan.

“Are you going to the Severing Land?”

The muscles on Mai’s face were twitching. He almost asked him word by word. He took a deep breath several times, pinched his hands, and almost could not help beating the person in front of him.

He knew that Shao Xuan would not give up without a try. What the hell was his promise last year!

This time he directly asked the Shaman for agreement, and the Shaman had agreed. What could he say!

“No, that place might be located on the other side of the mountain, or in other places. I’m just going to have a look to find out why Chacha always wants to go there.” Shao Xuan explained.

Hearing his explanation, Mai and Qiao felt even more worried.

They appreciated the courage of the warriors who were not afraid of death, but were unwilling to witness them taking unnecessary risks of death. Even the ancestors did not go to that place. Could Shao Xuan, who was not even a senior totem warrior, come back safely?

So terrible! Really terrible!

However, the hunting group did not know Shao Xuan's plan of going there until they went from the first location to the third.

“The Severing Land! Don’t go there!”

“Ah-Xuan, listen to Mai. Don't go.”

“If you go, you will not be able to come back. Don’t go. If Chacha really wants to go there, you can let it go alone. Why do you follow it?”

People in the hunting group were trying to persuade him out of going there. Over the past few years, they became closer with Shao Xuan, and were very optimistic about his development as a new warrior. More importantly, Shao Xuan was born in a cave near the mountain foot, but he was not inferior to those born higher up in the mountain, which made them proud of him.

In the eyes of many old warriors born near the mountain foot, Shao Xuan would have great achievements in the future, like those higher up on the mountain. He was supposed to live directly up on the mountain. Many of them often took Shao Xuan as an example to motivate their own children, like Sai’s father. Every time when he found Sai did not behave well, he always mentioned Shao Xuan. So now, Sai always very disliked seeing Shao Xuan.

But now, Shao Xuan intended to go to where the ancestors had not been. Did he want to die?!

Unfortunately, their persuasion was useless.

Why did the Shaman agree?

They did not understand.

But since the Shaman had agreed, they would no longer persuade him.

Mai asked Shao Xuan to have a talk with him alone, and also gave him a few good stone spears.

“Uncle Mai, if six days later I still do not come back, you don’t need to wait for me.” Said Shao Xuan.

Mai hesitated, but finally nodded.

Shao Xuan was not going to take Caesar with him, and he told Old Ke that if he did not come back, Old Ke could keep Caesar as a company.

The day before the departure for hunting, Shao Xuan did not bring Caesar, but left him in the tribe. When Shao Xuan left, Caesar also followed him for some distance. He did not stop until Shao Xuan scolded him.

After saying goodbye to the hunting group, Shao Xuan told Chacha to set out with him. And then, he held his feet as Chacha flew into the air. It was not easy to travel over the mountain, for there were hurdles on the way, and it was time-consuming. It would be easier for them to fly in the air, and there were not many large birds.

While standing on the ground, Chacha was slightly higher than Shao Xuan’s shoulder, so it was not so tiring for him to carry Shao Xuan.

They had been flying over this jungle, the more they moved forward, the fewer animals were found in the woods.

Half a day later, Shao Xuan saw the "Severing Land" that was recorded in the ancient volumes from the air.

It was a brown-colored thorny region, where there were very thick thorns, and branches covered with hard and sharp thorns. They overlapped with each other to keep people away. It looked like a horrible forest, almost blocking everything.

Some of the thorns near the ground were not very large, but they were still terrifying, like a pair of bloody eyes. They looked like an evil staring at each creature flying over the thorns.

Even the ferocious beasts that dominated the other places in the woods did not set foot here.

Looking at the endless thorny region, and glancing at the figures flashing in the gaps of the thorns, Shao Xuan decided to take a break first. After Chacha recovered from the fatigue, they would fly past that place.

---



# Chapter 137 - The Mountain

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

Shao Xuan brought some dry meat with him, but Chacha preferred fresh meat more.

Catching enough prey to settle his stomach, Chacha once again flew with Shao Xuan.

Occasionally, a large bird would fly over this area, and while it fought with Chacha, Shao Xuan almost fell down several times.

If Chacha had been bigger, Shao Xuan could have stood on his back, but at this moment, Chacha was a little bit small.

Shao Xuan swerved around to escape the pecking of an awl-like beak. He clutched Chacha's claws with one hand and with the other, quickly took out the stone needles that had been prepared from the skin bag tied around his waist to attack the birds flying towards him.

The stone needles that had absorbed the special grass juice had a strong paralysing effect. Shao Xuan specifically aimed at the body parts which their heavy feathers didn't completely cover. As long as the needle could penetrate

through the bird's skin, the juice would take effect and deter them away.

The birds that had attacked Shao Xuan felt dizzy after being shot. Disoriented, they slowed down. But now, this one was probably not as strong, so when it was shot on the neck, it flew up and down and then suddenly fell down. The moment it couldn't flap its wings to stop falling down, it hit an arched bridge of thorn branches.

Bang!

The violent impact made the already dizzy bird become even dizzier.

Furthermore, the tough thorns on the branches caused not a small amount of feathers to rip off.

After being hit with the needles and crashing into the "bridge", the bird had been scratched by the tough thorns.

Blood flowed freely from the wounds of the bird.

From within the thorns, creatures catching the scent of blood grew excited as they agilely weaved through the thorns to chase the scent.

In the air, Shao Xuan looked down and found shadows, from every direction, rapidly dashing through the thorns flocking to the struggling birds.

The creatures quickly surrounded the bird.

These creatures looked like monkeys, and the color of their fur was similar to that of the thorns. Most of them were as big as the two fists of an adult warrior and they were very nimble, not even dropping speed as they wove through the thorns.

This group of monkeys living in the thorns rushed towards the bird to bite it.

Suddenly, Shao Xuan found a mist of blood rise up from that place.

Splashes of blood sprinkled on the surrounding thorns. When the blood dries up, it will probably share the same color as the thorns.

A feather after another floated in the blood mist, and slowly fell down.

Some monkeys arrived late, so they could not squeeze into the monkey group to enjoy the meal. They were unwilling to leave, so they walked around, saw

Chacha in the air, screamed, and waved their claws. It seemed that they wanted to catch the bird in the sky.

Shao Xuan and Chacha looked down and shivered with fear. It seemed that they were imagining what they might have encountered if they had fallen down. Chacha flapped his wings, hoping to fly out of this place quickly.

“Don’t loosen your claws, buddy. If you do so, I will absolutely kick the bucket.” Shao Xuan gently patted his claws.

A cry resounded.

Chacha seemed to agree as he sped up and flew towards the distant mountain.

On the way they encountered a few birds again, but fortunately, in spite of some danger, they finally flew past the thorns region.

At dusk, they landed in a tree, and both released a long sigh and felt relieved.

No wonder the ancestors stayed away from the “Severing Land”. In addition to those tall, thick and sharp thorns, those monkeys would be able to quickly eat up a person. Even a senior totem warrior could not defeat such a great number of animals. Maybe there were other animals living in the thorns that hadn’t been found by Shao Xuan from the air.

“You take a rest first, I will keep watch.” Shao Xuan whispered to Chacha as he patted him.

When they flew past the thorns region, they arrived at a mountain similar to their hunting areas, but Shao Xuan still kept vigilant.

The night fell quietly.

Shao Xuan did not find a cave nearby, so he looked for a place in a tree and made some camouflage in the surrounding area with some branches. He also set up small traps, and sprinkled a powder that he brought with him. He planned to stay here for the night.

The sounds in the woods told Shao Xuan this place was the same as their hunting area.

He listened carefully and found sounds of different creatures mixing to form a

unique sound with regional characteristics. So, as long as he listened to the sounds, he could make a preliminary judgment.

Shao Xuan carefully identified the sounds.

No, it was different.

The active creatures at night were very different from those in their hunting area.

So he had to be more careful, and could not apply the knowledge from their hunting area to make a judgement.

At midnight, Shao Xuan was awakened by the rustle of leaves. To stay vigilant, it was impossible for him to have a sound sleep. He had developed a habit of resting while keeping wary, so a little abnormal sound could wake him up.

When he listened carefully, he heard a sound like the wind blowing the branches with leaves. It seemed that the leaves were rustling.

But in fact, at this time, there was no wind.

None of the leaves near him were rustling.

The bough below his was vibrating, which was almost impossible to detect. The vibration showed that something was climbing up the tree along the bough near Shao Xuan, instead of the bough he stood on.

The sound gradually came closer. Shao Xuan comforted Chacha. With his right hand holding a knife, he held his breath. At the same time, he used his special vision to look at the surroundings.

The branches were blocking his sight, but Shao Xuan could still penetrate the leaves to observe the surroundings.

He looked in the direction where the sound came from.

Is that a... snake?

In terms of its bones, it looked like a snake, but its outline was somewhat blurry, and its body surface was covered with a lot of long, thin, and dense things like bones. This was some kind of creature that Shao Xuan had never seen. Judging from its general shape, he tried to identify the creature coming up the tree.

The snake's body was much thicker than that of Shao Xuan so it could easily swallow him, which terrified him.

Fortunately, it did not climb to the bough where Shao Xuan stood on, but climbed along a branch to another tree.

After the strange snake left, the sound also gradually faded away. Chacha no longer felt anxious.

Shao Xuan held the stone knife firmly, and carefully let his breath out.

He did not know whether this trip was worthwhile. But his nature of an adventurous spirit from the previous life, and Chacha's desire of going to that place made him decide to take this trip.

Perhaps there was more danger ahead, but they could not go back. Shao Xuan would try to go further.

He might die and not return to the tribe. There was enough food left in the

tribe, and Caesar accompanied Old Ke so his life would not be tougher than the time when he worked as a stoneware maker.

Thinking about this, Shao Xuan screamed within his heart.

Is he going to die? How can it be?

Holding his knife, Shao Xuan closed his eyes to take a rest, for he had to move on tomorrow.

During the night, Shao Xuan woke up several times, and also saw a few nocturnal animals that were indeed different from those in the woods near the thorn region.

The next few days, Shao Xuan quietly ran through the woods while Chacha flew in the air.

Shao Xuan just followed Chacha, for he could attain the correct position.

This trip was aimed to find the place that Chacha desired to go, rather than hunt. Unless they had to get their most basic food necessities, neither Shao Xuan, nor Chacha, would take extra actions so that they could preserve their energy. Moreover, they had to guard against danger at any time. How could they spare some time and energy for other things?

Since Shao Xuan decided to take Chacha here, he had become energetic and went hunting every day. He ate a lot, and then hurried to move forward. He even flew while holding Shao Xuan. After all, travelling through the mountain was slower than flying in the air.

Sometimes, when they encountered some flying birds, Chacha would first try to avoid them, and if he failed, he would fight with them. If he was defeated, he would escape. If he failed to get rid of them, he would turn to Shao Xuan.

Enduring all kinds of difficulties, they kept moving forward for six days.

At this time, the hunting group had waited at the third location, but they did not see Shao Xuan so they just returned.

Shao Xuan never imagined that where Chacha wanted to go was so far!

They had been travelling for more than ten days, but still could not see the end. And during these days, several times, they were almost eaten by those bizarre ferocious beasts in the forest.

They suffered from a lot of injuries. When they got serious injuries, they would find a cave to rest properly for two days. And they could not become impatient, and just wait for the wound to heal up, and maintain a good physical condition to continue moving forward.

Sneaking in the dangerous woods made Shao Xuan more sensitive to the potential danger. At the same time, he became more skilled in hiding himself and his presence.

Holding the ragged tooth sword, Shao Xuan moved his arm. To escape the bladed teeth beast, he had broken his arm's bone, but this injury was not serious, so he would be much better after resting for a night.

His stone swords had all broken. He made a few rough stone swords on the way, but they also broke in fight with some ferocious beasts. Now, only the tooth sword made by Old Ke was left. But it was in a bad condition, so it probably could only be used for a short time.

In front of them, there was a cliff. Before Shao Xuan even made a gesture, Chacha flew down.

Shao Xuan inserted the tooth sword into the animal skin bag around his waist, and grabbed Chacha's claws with his uninjured arm.



Chacha flew down with Shao Xuan from the cliff.

Ahead of them, there was still a piece of endless huge jungle.

But the trees in this jungle seemed to be higher than those in the previous one.

After flying for some distance, Shao Xuan asked Chacha to find a place to put him down. Chacha did not respond to him. He did not see any threatening birds in the surrounding area so he continued to fly. He thought flying was faster.

“Well, then fly a little higher, I always feel that this place ...”

Before Shao Xuan finished, the “branch” at the top of a huge tree suddenly bent, and then shot like a spring towards Chacha that intended to fly over it.

The moment the “branch” shot out, the foliage on its body quickly shrunk. All the “leaves” stuck close together to the “branch”, and the “branch” also fell down. The “leaves” looked like scales.

It was a snake!

This strange snake reminded Shao Xuan of the creature they encountered the first night they entered the mountain.

---

# Chapter 138 - Land of the Serpents

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

“Careful!”

Shao Xuan cried out loudly.

Just like a spring, the serpent ejected his body, which streaked through the air and generated a grating sound, like strong wind. Chacha couldn't react in time.

Even if the distance was a dozen meters, the serpent arrived in the blink of an eye.

Shao Xuan wanted to help Chacha. But his ability was restricted in the air. The only thing he could do was just warn Chacha to watch out. However, it was still too late.

When Chacha heard Shao Xuan's warning, he wanted to fly higher, so he did not notice the serpent's movement. When he noticed that, he tried his best to avoid the serpent. However, he failed.

The serpent rushed at Chacha and gripped on one of Chacha's wings with his teeth.

Shao Xuan was on Chacha's back, so Chacha didn't have enough strength to keep flying in the air when he was dragged down by the serpent.

Jiaoo~~~

Chacha released a cry into the sky and fell down helplessly.

The serpent and Chacha fell on a tree and rolled down from the tree, passing through layers and layers of tree branches, and then finally falling to the ground with exuberant green grass.

Scenes like this were very familiar. The serpent was not afraid of dying or being injured when falling down. The obstructing tree branches reduced their falling speed, but not hurt the serpent at all. His skin protected him very well.

Biting one of Chacha's wings, the serpent rolled tightly over Chacha with his long body. For him, Chacha was the prey, he must strangle it first, and then eat it.

Jiaoo~~~

Chacha struggled to free himself, but he failed. He found he could not loosen himself at all. Every time he tried to get rid off the serpent, the serpent's body tighten around him even more, which made Chacha feel even more painful. He could not even cry for help, and it seemed he would lose his breath after a while.

When the serpent rolled up towards them, Shao Xuan, who was grasped by Chacha, got rid of the claws of Chacha promptly, took out the tooth sword and hacked down with great force. Bang! The sword hit heavily upon the body of the serpent.

Kaka!

A violent great sound echoed in the woods, as if tree branches were breaking.

The serpent's strong and thick skin was hit by Shao Xuan's tooth sword, and some fragments splintered off.

When Shao Xuan hunted in the hunting area, he used this sword to kill wild beasts. If the skin of his prey was too tough, he would hack them one more time with his tooth sword.

Shao Xuan hacked the serpent ceaselessly in one breath. Every time he hacked, he hacked at the same place. Even though a beast's skin was strong and was rigid, it would crack when one hacked it ceaselessly with the sharp tooth sword .

However, the serpent had his defense, which were his specialized scales. The scales seemed like tree branches and could protect the serpent from being found. However, the scales were much more harder than tree branches. Even though Shao Xuan hacked the serpent with his tooth sword, he could not wound it with just one hack.

Yes, Shao Xuan was wounded before and lost some strength. He could not give the serpent a finishing hack. The leathery armour of the serpent, which was more difficult to hack than the solid spine of the thorn black wind, was a big problem for Shao Xuan.

But, if hacking once is useless, then hack twice, hack ceaselessly.

Many tough fragments were splintered off, and some flew towards Shao Xuan and hit his face, which made him feel painful. Like something exploding, the fragments scattered everywhere.

Do not stop! Do not give the beast enough time to react!

Chacha was coiled up by him. Shao Xuan needed to solve the sudden problem in the least amount of time possible. The longer it took, the possibility of Chacha being strangled to death became higher.

Ka! Ka! Ka!

He hacked for three consecutive times, which generated crisp sounds. The debris from the hard skin splattered everywhere. The weird serpent roared strangely, which was like the whistle from a narrow gap that the stormy wind swiftly swept through.

Hack!

Hack!

Hack!

Shao Xuan had no time to care about the discomfort in his ear, and only focused on hacking at the crack on the back of the serpent with the tooth sword. He hacked and hacked, the serpent's thick and hard leathery armor cracked deeper and deeper.

The big serpent learned what Shao Xuan wanted to do and he became angry.

The specialized scales that had been contracted, unfolded, as leaves in spring growing rapidly. Except for the part where Chacha was coiled up in, other parts stood up and unfolded completely. The serpent's original big body expanded

twice suddenly, like a branch blooming!

The sharp two eyes on the weird face of the serpent, which Shao Xuan had never seen, stared at Shao Xuan. The brown forked tongue was like a branch, dancing outside its mouth. The serpent twisted its sturdy body, and swept against Shao Xuan mercilessly with its tail.

Shao Xuan had to stop hacking temporarily. He bent his knees, and swerved a little. His foot stepped heavily on the ground, all the plants under his foot became a green muddy puddle instantly.

In order to avoid the sudden tailsweep of the serpent, Shao Xuan hit the ground and bounced to his feet instantly. His feet hit the ground heavily, leaving deep prints on the ground. He changed his position as quick as the wind to avoid being hit by the serpent. Soon afterwards, Shao Xuan swiftly slashed the sword and heavily hacked on the crack that had been hacked several times just now!

Do not think that I can't see your scar when you expanded!

Hack!

The "leaves" that were covering the opening were cut off. Shao Xuan continuously slashed the sword and exactly hit the crack that had been hacked several times just now! Then, continuous hacking followed, and the serpent had no time to strike back.

Even if the tooth sword was not sharp enough, it would do great harm to the big serpent.

Puchi.

The big serpent spluttered weird dark green blood from his mouth.

In spite of their hard shell, no ferocious beast could avoid injury and pain.

After all, the serpent did not have a body of steel. His thick and hard leather had a big crack, and this crack was becoming deeper and deeper. If the serpent did not take measures, he would be cut apart.

Feeling the pain on his body, the big serpent became angry and roared continuously. At first, he only focused on that eagle that flew over him, because he liked to eat this kind of eagle the most. As for the creature held by the eagle, the serpent thought it was just a prey caught by the eagle, and did not take it seriously. The serpent could not understand why the creature in front of him looked so weak, but had unexpectedly threatened him a lot.

The serpent never expected its outer layer breaking, and blood flowing out. If the serpent knew what would happen, he would have left the creature far behind after he had seized that eagle.

Unfortunately, it was too late.

The serpent was twisting its body in order to prevent its wound from being attacked again.

However, Shao Xuan was very agile, he not only avoided the serpent's attack, but also struck back repeatedly.

Another hack!

Again!

The tooth sword flashed repeatedly.

The wound on the big serpent was getting bigger and bigger, and the dark green blood was flowing out even more.

Eventually, the big serpent chose to abandon the prey, put away the "leaves" and threw away the coiled up eagle. Then, the serpent left quickly, dragging its injured body.

It had been only one minute from when the big serpent fell on the ground



with Chacha, to the time that the serpent was defeated and ran away. The reason for the serpent being defeated in such a short time was that Shao Xuan was worried about Chacha's condition, and didn't give any time to the serpent to strike back. Relatively, Shao Xuan had unleashed much more strength than usual in such a short time.

Watching the serpent fleeing away, Shao Xuan breathed heavily and did not chase after it. After the serpent threw down Chacha, Shao Xuan quickly ran over to check his injury.

Chacha's wings were injured and had a fracture. They could only move up and down powerlessly, he might not fly for a short period of time.

He examined Chacha's parts which had been bit by the big serpent, and no bite marks by fangs were found. The wounds didn't seem to have any toxins.

Shao Xuan relaxed, for Chacha was ok.

Having solved the trouble just now, Shao Xuan was considering finding a safe place to heal Chacha's wounds. After both of them had recovered, they would fly high over the sky, which he thought may be much safer than otherwise.

Of course, they had to fly high and not give any chance to this kind of weird serpents. In this forest, there were many weird serpents that Shao Xuan had encountered several nights.

No wonder they had not seen any other birds in the sky, probably, the birds had been caught by these weird serpents.

While Shao Xuan was thinking, he suddenly stopped moving.

And Chacha, who was swerving up and down despondently, also stopped.

Sha sha——

Sha sha sha sha——

Above their head came the familiar sound once again.

Cold sweat dripped from Shao Xuan's forehead, and his muscles tightened up. Shao Xuan had run out of almost all his power in that one minute, and now, he was still in a state of exhaustion. Before coming here, Shao Xuan had gone through a battle and had hurt his arms. He had thought that he would have time to recover, but he suffered another attack in this forest just now, which caused him to have no time to recover.

Shao Xuan turned around, with his back facing Chacha, and looked up to look in the direction that the sound came from.

Standing on the ground, Shao Xuan looked up in the large forest, he saw that the lush foliage was all over the sky. The little bit of sunshine through the leaves seemed like some kind of charity.

Because some branches had been broken off when the big serpent fell to the ground, dragging Chacha down with him, more sunshine could come down now. Combined with the surrounding environment, the sunshine was like a column of light which was incomparably eye-catching.

At this moment, Shao Xuan and Chacha were standing in the column of light.

The sunshine made this place much warmer than the rest of the forest. If they were in the tribe, basking in the sunshine might have been a very enjoyable thing. The comfortable sunshine and warmth almost made people close their eyes. [I'm getting sleepy here myself]

But at the moment, neither Shao Xuan nor Chacha were able to feel the warmth. On the contrary, they just felt like they were in the coldest winter snow.

Looking at the distance, they found there were no other creatures or flying

insects in the forest.

Above, two sturdy “branches” bent and then slid down the trunk.

Bang!

The slight short thud was just like what Shao Xuan had heard in the air. The two big serpents had retracted the special scales which were used for camouflage. They moved towards Shao Xuan unhurriedly, and didn't seem worried that the prey would run away.

One was in the front, and the other in the back. Shao Xuan and Chacha were cornered in the middle.

Bang! Bang!

Bang! Bang!

Shao Xuan heard his heart thumping, and feel his palms sweating.

The grasped tooth sword was not trembling, and Shao Xuan was thinking about the solution. He knew that his physical energy was going to be exhausted. Even if he continued fighting with the serpents again, there was not much chance of winning. Yes, if he risked his life in fighting, he might have a little hope to win. But now there were two serpents, and any one of them was not less than the one before.

---

# Chapter 139 - The Giant Eagle

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

The two serpents were much larger than Shao Xuan, even without their special scales. They were slowly moving towards Shao Xuan and Chacha.

Strangely enough, Shao Xuan saw a kind of ridicule in their cold eyes.

Though witnessing the retreat of their own kind under the sword of Shao Xuan, they didn't come to help, but kept observing from those high branches. They seemed to have been using him to test out the actual strength of Shao Xuan. As they now found that Shao Xuan was too exhausted to pose a threat to them, and they were also attracted by the seemingly delicious little eagle beside Shao Xuan. Finally, they climbed down from the tree slowly.

The two serpents started approaching Shao Xuan slowly in the special way they crawl.

Just as Shao Xuan was contemplating whether to duke it out or try to escape while carrying Chacha, a shrill eagle scream came from the sky all of a sudden.

The scream not only shocked the silent forest, but also interrupted the slow pace of the serpents.

The serpents seemed to sense something using their tongues, and stopped approaching Shao Xuan and Chacha.

Shao Xuan's heart started beating violently.

It must be an eagle.

Eagles and snakes were each other's nemesis. Either the former ate the latter, or the latter ate the former.

Of course, Shao Xuan and Chacha were too weak to threaten the two serpents.

Weak creatures could hardly survive in this forest.

Chacha turned his head, shifting his attention from the serpents to the sky

Whoosh!

A great figure flew over their heads.

It seemed that the two serpents were wavering between whether to leave or not. At the same time, the great figure flew over again. However, this time it directly flew through the dense twigs above with force.

It tore apart the dense twigs with its two big claws, showing an eagle head as large as Chacha himself.

It must be another Giant Mountain Eagle, Shao Xuan thought.

This one could be considered large from among the Giant Mountain Eagles. Compared to it, Chacha was just like a kid in kindergarten.

Ferociously staring at the two serpents on the ground, the giant eagle dived towards them.

The twigs cracked!

Countless twigs broke off and fell down like rain.

Shao Xuan hurriedly carried Chacha and hid. He did not dare to immediately escape, because the giant eagle could fend off the serpents here. However, they might come across more serpents if they just ran away.

So it was better to stay here and check the situation first.

Flying aggressively through the twigs, the giant eagle fell down with its big claws grasping a branch that even 10 people could not embrace, leaving many hollow spots.

When the eagle was merely several meters above the ground, it dived towards one of the serpents with all its strength concentrated on its claws.

However, the space below the forest was still a little bit narrow for the eagle to

stretch its wings, which adversely affected its flexibility to a large extent. Even so, its claws still strongly struck the serpent.

The eagle smashed the serpent with its claws swiftly and violently onto the ground, and then pecked it with its pointy beak that was as sharp as a blade.

The other serpent wanted to help its companion, but only managed to bite a few eagle feathers and then was slapped by the eagle wing.

Normally, eagles would hunt in a wider space than a dense forest, unless they were trapped in them. Besides, it was likely for their wings to be injured by twigs. Even if the eagle had tougher wings than ordinary birds, it wasn't really free from its influence.

Shao Xuan dared not to help the eagle because he would do a disservice to it if he joined in the battle of the three giant beasts.

The giant eagle grasped the injured serpent and threw it against the thick branch vigorously. The other serpent tried to bite the eagle and was whipped using the captured serpent.

Bang!

The head of the serpent bumped against the branch over and over again, with every vigorous slam leaving a dent on the branch.

Shao Xuan laughed with his mouth wide open. The eagle was indeed a master in this aspect, and was apparently skillful in using a serpent like a whip. It was

his first time seeing an eagle using a snake as a whip like this.

The giant eagle seemed to know well about its weaknesses in a forest, thus dealt with its preys in an easier way.

Chacha was also shocked by the scene, but it soon became excited and yearned to hold the serpent like that and throw it around a few times.

Finally, the serpent that was thrown around began to feel dizzy and was ripped apart by the eagle's beak without finding an opportunity to bite its claw.

Its thick and hard skin had been pecked many times, there was brown and green blood everywhere. Every time when it was pecked by the eagle's beak, a piece of the serpent's flesh was torn off.

The other serpent tried to escape, so the giant eagle put down the wounded one to capture it.

Finally, both the serpents fell under the eagle's claws.

After pecking and tearing apart the two serpents, the giant eagle threw one of them to Shao Xuan and Chacha with its claw, and then fluttered its wings while holding the other one. It seemed that the eagle intended to leave and find another place to enjoy its prey.

The thrown serpent was apparently a charity from the giant eagle. But how could Shao Xuan give up this opportunity just for that?

So he carried Chacha and rushed towards the eagle with all his strength.

He could see that the giant eagle didn't intend to kill Chacha, but for prudence sake, he slowed down after running forward a few steps.



The giant eagle paused from flying off and glared at Shao Xuan, who got a scare and broke out in a cold sweat.

Chacha also gave a lot of help. It gave full play to its cleverness and “shamelessness” by whining to the giant eagle for sympathy.

While Shao Xuan was approaching, the giant eagle stared at him, seemed to be lost in thought and reduced its fierceness.

It fluttered its wings and flew up while holding out its claws to the ground.

Shao Xuan grasped Chacha by one of his legs and then jumped up and coiled his legs around some part of serpent body which had been pecked to vertebra. It was the only part which was thin enough for Shao Xuan to put his legs around.

Along with the rising of the giant eagle, Shao Xuan hung upside down by holding on the serpent. He was soaked by the brown and green blood. And Chacha was also very uncomfortable, for he was rarely grasped upside down like this.

Thanks to his strong body with the power of a totem warrior, Shao Xuan could carry the weight of Chacha. Usually, in the tribe, it was even not difficult for him to carry big stones, and Chacha was much lighter than the stones, despite of his larger body size.

When rising, the giant eagle could not fly freely, so it often had to rely on surrounding trees, which made Shao Xuan and Chacha collide many times with the trees. Thus they understood the feeling the serpent had that time.

Shao Xuan made every effort to hold onto Chacha firmly so that he doesn't slip out of his hands.

They dared not to hope that the eagle would allow them to sit on its back. Actually, the eagle had a good temperament. It still showed some kindness to Chacha, even though they were not of the same blood. However, Shao Xuan dared not to ask too much of it, or it might become irritated and eat the both of them.

In the fierce beast world, it was normal for a same species to eat another.

After flying out of the forest, the eagle could fly much more easily. Shao Xuan even felt that it was easier for him to breathe.

The giant eagle ascended higher and higher to keep away from the top of the forest.

It was quite an experienced eagle, while Chacha was just a greenhorn.

Together with the scene of the ground getting smaller, Shao Xuan's view also got wider. Shao Xuan could see the mountains in the distance, and the green forest.

He hadn't had the time to observe the giant eagle until he was high up in the sky.

After carefully observing, Shao Xuan found that its state was not as good as he had thought. Fragments of its claws were about to fall off, as well as two bleeding broken toes, which was caused by the battle with the two serpents just now. Besides, its flying posture was also not as swift and violent as it had been before. It fluttered heavily as if it suffered from great gravity. In fact, the weight of Shao Xuan and Chacha meant nothing to such a giant eagle. As to the serpent grasped by the eagle, it could also not be that heavy.

It seemed very hard for the giant eagle to fly.

Then Shao Xuan moved his attention from its claws to its feathers and its beak. Though it resembled Chacha greatly, Shao Xuan was very familiar with Chacha that he could notice the tiny difference between their beaks. Its beak was more crooked than Chacha's, which was not convenient for pecking prey.

Was it caused by disease?

Or by other factors?

Despite of its seemingly aggressive manner, the eagle suffered from a weakened body. Any fight could bring it tremendous pain.

It was beyond imagination that the eagle, so strong and fierce just now in the forest, should be in such a state. If not for this sight, Shao Xuan would have believed that it was still healthy and strong.

While he was pondering, a possibility occurred to Shao Xuan.

Is it possible that the eagle was getting old?

But he had no idea how old the eagle was and how long it would take for Chacha to

grow that large.

Dozens of years?

Hundreds of years?

Or even longer ?

The mountain range was getting close. Shao Xuan had never come here. Besides, the direction the giant eagle was flying in seemed to be the same as Chacha's.

Was it possible that they were flying to the Eagle Mountain?

However Shao Xuan didn't see any other giant eagles here. If it was the Eagle Mountain, why did they see no other eagles here?

It appeared that the Eagle Mountain was still far from here.

This location was just where the giant eagle stopped over temporarily.

When they were close to the high mountain, the giant eagle started to flutter its wings vigorously to go higher. This way, Shao Xuan could feel its tiredness more clearly. Even Chacha could more easily carry Shao Xuan before.

Finally, the giant eagle landed beside a cliff, throwing the serpent on the ground. Shao Xuan also dismounted from the serpent and went to the other side while carrying Chacha.

Shao Xuan didn't touch the serpent because it was hunted by the giant eagle. Most fierce beasts highly valued the exclusivity of their prey, so they would risk their life in protecting them.

Chacha also left the serpent alone, staying quietly besides Shao Xuan.

Shao Xuan grabbed two hunks of medium-sized dried meat from his animal skin bag, which were somewhat hard to chew. He gave one piece to Chacha, leaving the other one for himself.

However, Chacha stared at the meat in Shao Xuan's hand with some hesitation. Though it didn't like such processed meat, it had no choice but to eat that to heal.

Bang!

A hunk of bloody serpent meat was thrown to Chacha by the giant eagle.

Chacha looked at the giant eagle who was busy pecking and then to the fresh meat in front of him, giving up the dried meat from Shao Xuan.

Shao Xuan retracted his hand and started to eat the dried meat. Meanwhile, he said to himself silently that the giant eagle seemed to be very kind. Was it a general character shared by the elderly?

---

# Chapter 140 - The Ice Layer at the Mountaintop

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

After staying two days at the edge of the cliff, Shao Xuan has almost recovered, and his injuries on the arm also healed up. But Chacha's ability to recover was lower than Shao Xuan's, so it had taken him a dozen days to recover to full health.

What surprised Shao Xuan the most was that the giant eagle had stayed here for more than 10 days, and he did not have a nest here, he was also just passing by. Every day after catching prey to fill his stomach, it stood on a high rock to rest, instead of leaving immediately. In addition, it also gave some of its food to Chacha every day.

These days, Chacha's fatigue had decreased and he had restored to a good state of mind. And he had enough food, so he just focused on patiently healing his wounds.

Shao Xuan would climb down the mountain to hunt, but without Chacha's help, he had some trouble, because that giant eagle did not help him go down

the mountain.

Besides food, Shao Xuan also found some herbs to apply on Chacha's wounds. He had intended to see if the giant eagle needed his help, but only to find it stay away from him on purpose. Shao Xuan temporarily gave up this idea.

As soon as Chacha could fly again, the giant eagle did not intend to stay.

It would go with Chacha in that direction, and Shao Xuan did not know whether he should follow them or just return. Together with this giant eagle, Chacha should be much safer.

However, after Chacha flew up, it screamed towards Shao Xuan to tell him to hurry and catch up with them.

Shao Xuan smiled, and decided to follow them to see the legendary Eagle Mountain. He put away the tooth sword, ran for a distance, and then leaped to catch Chacha's legs, who was flying towards him.

The giant eagle in the sky seemed to be very impatient, hovering several times, which marked it was urging them to leave.

"Let's go!" Said Shao Xuan.

A scream was heard.

After screaming with joy, Chacha flapped his wings, and followed after the giant eagle.

This time, Chacha would not keep close to the trees in the woods, but maintain a certain distance to avoid being attacked again.

The giant eagle's flying posture seemed even more unstable than ten days ago. It was more and more obvious that it had difficulty flying. But even so, for Chacha and Shao Xuan, it flew plenty fast, so Chacha could barely keep up with it.

During the day, they kept flying. In the evening, they found a place to rest. They brought their prey to a high cliff, and quietly ate it. In this area, there were many high mountains. Sometimes they encountered other creatures living in the high mountains. Usually the giant eagle fought with the prey while Shao Xuan and Chacha cheered for him nearby. If they tried helping him, it would just

cause some trouble to him.

Every time the giant eagle fought with the other ferocious beasts, Shao Xuan found that it got more and more injuries. Its claws, beak, and feathers were in a worse condition than they were when Shao Xuan met it for the first time. Only the pair of eagle eyes kept their invincible sharpness.

Under the escort of the giant eagle, they avoided a lot of trouble, for the flying birds did not dare to provoke them on their way.

They had left the third holdout for about thirty days now, but they still did not see the destination.

However, judging from Chacha's and that giant eagle's behavior, Shao Xuan could perceive the changes in their minds. They were excited, and had sparkling eyes. Even the weather-beaten giant eagle showed his strong desire to arrive there without any more delay.

The destination was around the corner.

This day, these two eagles hurriedly continued on with their journey, and Shao Xuan observed the surrounding scene. In front of them, there was a long dragon-like mountain. This mountain was very high, which reminded Shao Xuan of the mountain in the second location. Most of the birds were obstructed by the high mountain.

Whenever they encountered such a mountain and they went over it, they would see a different scenery.



The top of the mountain was obstructed by clouds, so they could only see the vast land below the clouds that was covered by snow.

The giant eagle began to fly higher, followed by Chacha.

They planned to go over the mountain.

On their way over, they had climbed many mountains, this time though, it was much more difficult for them.

The higher they flew, the more difficult it became. It seemed that there was a force that pushed back any creature trying to fly higher.

After flying for a distance, Chacha felt tired and rested on a protruding rock.

“Chacha, you go on and follow him up, I’ll stop here.” Said Shao Xuan as he touched the feathers on Chacha’s head.

“Jiao~~~!”

Chacha avoided his hand, fluttered his wings and scratched the rock near him with his claws.

“Why are you so stubborn? I will wait here...” Said Shao Xuan. Thinking about it, he asked, “You will come back, won’t you?”

Chacha made a cry and continued to scratch the rock.

“But if it takes too long I will return by myself.” Shao Xuan planned to stay in this area, where the species were strange to him. He thought that perhaps he could discover some precious herbs from in the ancient volumes.

He had always stayed in the tribe, and it had been boring for him to follow the same route. He could seize this chance to visit this foreign place. He’d like to see the so-called Eagle Mountain, but Chacha was still too small to fly higher with him in this place.

The giant eagle above began to urge him.

Chacha still hesitated, and screamed to the eagle.

“Catch up with him!” Said Shao Xuan. It’s so rare to find such a thick thigh to

latch onto, if he lost it, where would he find another one?

While Shao Xuan was talking to him, he suddenly felt a gust of wind behind him. Then he turned around, and found a big eagle claw coming at him.

Shao Xuan did not take out his tooth sword because it did not pose any threat to him.

Standing on the ground, the giant eagle was nearly ten meters high, so its claws were naturally much larger than those Chacha. It was easy for it to grab Shao Xuan.

After clutching Shao Xuan, the giant eagle flew up immediately. Chacha glanced at it, and quickly kept up with them.

The giant eagle was used to hold prey, so it didn't reduce its strength, which made Shao Xuan feel like his internal organs were being squeezed out and his bones being broken. If he had not been a strong totem warrior, but an ordinary man, this hold would have killed him.

But the eagle was full of good intentions. This period of time of being together made the giant eagle no longer keep away from Shao Xuan. It found Chacha had great difficulty in flying with Shao Xuan, so it offered a hand. But it did not know there were many creatures much more vulnerable than its prey.

Though without Shao Xuan, Chacha's burden was lifted, it still could not fly fast due to the increasing pressure. It seemed that there was an invisible big hand pressing him down with increased force when he rose a little.

Chacha had such a feeling, and so did the giant eagle. Shao Xuan's weight was a piece of cake for the giant eagle, but it had to resist the pressure from below to higher.

The mountain they saw was covered by snow and ice. Neither green plants, nor the top, could be seen. When they looked up, they could only see layers of clouds.

The cold air poured into their lungs. In the beginning, Shao Xuan could stand it, for it was as cold as the winter in the tribe. But as they continued to rise, Shao Xuan found that even a totem warrior could not withstand such bitter cold.

His animal skin coat began to be covered with white frost, and the range of frosting was expanding.

In addition to his animal skin coat, his hair, the feathers of the giant eagle and Chacha were also being frozen.

Above them there was some light, but the golden sunshine at this time could not make them feel warm.

If it was at night, it probably would be colder. Therefore, they had to reach before it got dark.

Shao Xuan circulated the power of the totem in his body, so that the warm flow would make his whole body warm. But once he stopped mobilizing the power, he would feel the bitter cold again.

When Shao Xuan felt he was almost frozen into a popsicle, he finally saw the top of the mountain.

This pleased the frozen Shao Xuan and the exhausted Chacha. Chacha began flapping his wings energetically.

Close.

Closer.

They ascended slowly, and then went over the clouds around the top. Looking at the scene in front of him, Shao Xuan's pupils contracted slightly.

He originally thought that after he went over the top and descended, he would get to the other side of the mountain. But in fact, when they arrived at the top, they saw a flat ground.

Bang!

The giant eagle landed on the ice layer at the top of the mountain.

Having been thrown away, Shao Xuan rolled over on the frozen ground before he stopped.

The ground was covered with thick snow, and the snow was as hard as stone.

Behind them was a cloud layer. He felt that he rode on the clouds, and stepped into paradise. But when he looked at the front, the clouds blocked everything, so he could not see what was in the front.

However, Shao Xuan could feel that in these clouds, there were other living creatures.

After the giant eagle let Shao Xuan go, it took a rest and then moved forward.

Chacha hurried to keep up with it.

The cold fog permeated the air. Shao Xuan walked near them.

When he turned around, he could only see the fog. The place they had landed in disappeared into the fog,

On the ground, there were some prominent crystal-like icicles, which could be seen every few tens of meters.

Crack!

Crack! Crack!

Shao Xuan looked around, and heard the same sound coming from all directions. Some sounds were near, and some were far from him.

But Shao Xuan did not dare to be distracted. He closely followed the giant eagle with Chacha.

Da~ da~

Behind them, the sound of footsteps came. It was the sound of an eagle's footsteps.

A gust of cold wind blowing from the back made Shao Xuan shiver.

With the sound of footsteps getting closer, Shao Xuan turned his head to look. What he saw made him gasp.

Because of the fog, Shao Xuan did not see it clearly. He could only see a huge black figure in the fog. Compared with the giant eagle, Chacha was as small as a kid. But compared with this big guy, the giant eagle was as small as a kid.

Was this also... a giant mountain eagle?

Shao Xuan looked at it with his special vision, although it was still blocked by fog, he could vaguely see the eagle's skeleton.

He took a deep cold breath.

Shao Xuan suddenly felt that he really had a narrow horizon. The size of the giant eagle could be imagined according to its name. The one that he had seen before was not typical of its kind. It was unknown whether there were bigger

giant eagles.

Among these big guys, Shao Xuan felt tense, as if he fell into a monster den.

Looking at the large eagle and the small one in front of him, Shao Xuan quickly kept up with them. Anyway, he had better follow them at the moment.

The giant eagle led the small Chacha out of this land surrounded by clouds and fog. When they came to a protruding crystal-shaped icicle, the giant eagle lowered its head to bite the icicle. It pecked off a piece, then gave it a bite. He swallowed it and then continued to peck another.

Chacha had a look and also pecked the icicle.

Listening to the cracking sound, Shao Xuan then understood how the sound coming from all directions was produced.

---

# Chapter 141 - The Eagle Mountain

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

Shao Xuan thought that they would travel through this place, but it turned out that these two eagles just stopped here, and bit the icicles next to them if they were hungry. They continued to stand here as if they were waiting for something.

The crystal-like icicles on the ice layer contained energy, not as pure and much less than that of the fire crystals. But these icicles were what the giant mountain eagles lived on.

Shao Xuan pried a icicle off with his tooth sword and tried it. He found that it was so hard that he could hardly eat it. Those giant eagles could take a big bite, while Shao Xuan could only scrape off a little at a time.

Although biting the icicles made Shao Xuan shiver, the energy obtained from them helped the totem power in his body move for a while longer. This way, he could withstand the bitter cold on this ice layer and survive.

When Chacha stayed in the tribe in winter, it still slept in his nest on the roof and did not feel cold at all. That was because compared to the bitter cold in this



place, the winter in the tribe was warm for the giant mountain eagles.

Besides the huge figure Shao Xuan saw in the beginning, he also saw many other giant mountain eagles constantly.

Some had a similar size as the giant eagle that brought them here, while some were much bigger than the one that had shocked Shao Xuan on the first day.

Did the word 'mountain' in the name 'giant mountain eagles' refer to this?

Was this place the Eagle Mountain? Shao Xuan guessed.

These giant mountain eagles flocked here, and did not leave. They did not fight, but just waited. Even Chacha, with his excessive energy, also became well-behaved and stayed close to the giant eagle that brought them here at any time. [Chacha found his Old Ke.]

Since his birth, it was the first time for him coming to this place which it knew the direction to and had a strong desire to go, which totally depended on the instinct in his blood.

Day by day, Shao Xuan did the same things. If hungry, he gnawed on some icicles like those giant eagles, and then he sat quietly next to the two eagles and circulated the totem power to withstand the cold.

Shao Xuan looked pale, and his breath was slow. At night, he often trembled and felt too cold to fall asleep. He thought he was going to be integrated with this piece of ice layer. The only thing he could do was to continuously circulate the totem power in his body.

Next to Shao Xuan, Chacha was not feeling that well either. It was the first time for him facing such a grim environment, so he did not fully adjust himself and was not ready for it.

In contrast, the giant eagle staying with them, and the other giant eagles, were so calm that it seemed that they could not feel the bitter cold. They had been used to such an environment.

Chacha initially intended to squeeze into the wings of the giant eagle to keep himself warm, but it was mercilessly chased away. It leaned against Shao Xuan. Both were shivering in the cold fog.

Gradually, Shao Xuan began to adjust. Even when he slept, his totem power could circulate in his body spontaneously and tirelessly to make him warm. As a giant mountain eagle, Chacha also adjusted and became better after several days.

Shao Xuan used his tooth sword to carve traces in an icicle next to him to record the number of the passing days. And in this process, Shao Xuan found that these icicles actually grew. The mark he made twenty days ago was in a higher position. In addition, the icicles become thicker, so the bite marks and scratches left by the two eagles gradually became invisible.

No wonder those eagles ate so much but there was still a lot of ice on the ground. It grew by itself.

This was a strange place.

Da! Da! Da! Da!

The sound of footsteps came. It sounded like a giant eagle of a huge size, for its steps were slightly heavy.

With the sound of footsteps getting closer, the fog could no longer block its figure.

That huge and tall figure walked past Shao Xuan, which allowed him to observe it clearly. But he saw its claws the most clearly, for the fog still blurred the upper part of its body.

It should be a very old eagle, and perhaps it had been a leader ruling some place. It had met numerous threats in the wild, and had faced up to the challenges from those of its same kind and the other ferocious beasts. It had ruled a piece of the sky and soared in the sky. But now it became old, and its sharp claws became blunt. There were a lot of fragments falling of its' toes. Its feathers had bald spots, and there were a lot of wounds, large and small, deep or shallow, in its legs.

Its condition was similar to that eagle that brought them here.

The huge figure passed by them closely. It could easily wrap around Chacha with its claws. When it fluttered its wings, Shao Xuan found a shadow above his head. Its wings could block all the light.

Chacha and the giant eagle looked up and then lowered their sight. They continued to be in a daze, or perhaps in deep thought.

The huge figure gradually faded away, and completely disappeared in the fog.

Twenty days... thirty days...

On the fortieth day, the surrounding giant mountain eagles no longer stayed silent, but became active. Sometimes they screamed and then successive echoes would be heard everywhere.

These days, more and more giant mountain eagles arrived here every day. Shao Xuan could see figures of various sizes passing by him. Among them, there

was a small eagle of a similar size as Chacha, he probably followed its parents here. It walked next to two huge figures, and when it saw Shao Xuan, it was curious and came closer to him, but its parents called it back.

The fog was lifting.

The sunlight came through the clouds, and the picture gradually became clear.

This day, when the sun rose and shone on this piece of ice layer, Shao Xuan found that the surrounding fog had cleared.

Around, big or small figures could be seen. Those small ones had a similar size as Chacha .The big ones were as huge as a mountain.

These figures completely blocked Shao Xuan's view. Among them, Shao Xuan was like an alien that broke into a giant group. He was so small that they did not even glance at him.

Shao Xuan did not know where so many giant beasts had lived before. Living in the tribe in recent years, He had never seen so many giant eagles when he went hunting with the group, or when he followed the advance group and found Chacha in the green land.

They were not exactly the same. Some looked a little different in their patterns and fur color. But their looks were similar, and they were all giant mountain eagles.

Perhaps they came from the continent. Perhaps, they had lived in a group somewhere. But no matter where they came from, at the moment, they gathered together here.

“Jiao~~~!”

“Jiao~~~!”

It seemed that the scream came from afar, and it sounded like not just one eagle, but like a group of eagles screaming. The resonance was echoing.

A group of eagles echoed each other and the sound was getting closer.

Whiz!

A huge figure flew in the sky, and flew above the numerous giant mountain eagles standing on the ice layer.

It had a pointed beak, sharp claws, strong wings, and a lofty figure. It showed its pleasure of freedom and its heroic deeds.

This figure covered the sky above Shao Xuan.

The original golden sunlight was completely blocked.

This was just a beginning.

After it, one, two... ten... a hundred eagles...

A group of giant mountain eagles followed.

They all fluttered their strong wings as they flew freely and rapidly with heroic pride. Their flying posture clearly showed their excitement and pleasure.

Compared with the old ones standing on the ice layer at this time, they were strong and full of vitality.

They did not only flew in the sky above Shao Xuan, between the gaps in the distance, he could see several huge figures flying over.

They came from the front and then went back to the other side of the mountain. The strong wind caused by the group of eagles almost blew away Shao Xuan.

After these figures gradually disappeared, there was some sound at the front.

It was the sound of fluttering wings. It rang with increasing frequency.

Shao Xuan saw the giant eagles in front of him also flapping their wings, and then flying away.

Next to him, the two screams were heard.

Shao Xuan looked over. Chacha followed them after he screamed towards Shao Xuan.

When the huge guys that had blocked his view left, a mountain covered with snow appeared in front of Shao Xuan.

That mountain was a little far from him, and very large, so its top could not be seen.

Shao Xuan thought that the mountain that he had gone over was extremely high, but now he found a higher one.

In the golden sun, the snowy mountain gave off a bright halo, staying independant.

Standing on the ice layer, Shao Xuan looked at the huge snow-capped mountain quietly, and felt his soul being shocked. Under such circumstances, he suddenly had a sense of pilgrimage.

Thousands of eagles flew towards the snowy mountain.

What was ahead?

Shao Xuan also walked over there, and sped up. His legs gradually became agile, though he had not moved his legs for a long time, and finally ran straight ahead.

Chacha and that giant eagle soon joined the eagle group. There were so many eagles that it was hard to tell which one was Chacha.

Shao Xuan followed the eagle group forward, and then he saw the flying giant eagles dropping down and finally disappear on the boundary of the ice layer.

He arrived at the end of the ice layer, but in front of the ice layer, there was an endless abyss.

The eagle group flew from the top of the ice layer down to the abyss. Although they were flying down, they went in the direction towards the snow-capped mountain.

Neither the top, nor the bottom, of the distant snowy mountain could be seen. The mountain was standing there aloof.

It was the Eagle Mountain. This time, Shao Xuan was absolutely sure.

Standing on the edge, Shao Xuan was watching the eagles disappear in the abyss.

After some time, the fog began to gather together.

The fog blocked Shao Xuan's view, so everything looked just like before.



---

# Chapter 142 - White Insects

Translated by TheLorax

Edited by EvilGurl, Ilesyt, Kezza

---

On this massive layer of ice, only Shao Xuan could be found.

In all four directions around him, there was only silence.

Normally, the environment here was covered in fog, obscuring the vision, and from time to time, various cries could be heard. Maybe the sounds were caused by the movements of giant creatures. Or maybe it was the act of them gnawing on the columns of ice.

Yet now, the cries that echoed in the past have now disappeared.

This had left Shao Xuan with a feeling of desolation.

On the other hand, after the disappearance of these giant eagles, Shao Xuan decided to explore this layer of ice. Upon arrival on this block of ice, due to the surrounding giant eagles, Shao Xuan did not dare to walk freely. Now, as the eagles have even flown away, he did not need to be this mindful.

Even if his vision had been obstructed, capitalizing on when the fog scattered, he had already made a mental map of his surroundings.

He only had to be a bit careful as this wasn't anything major.

Walking to the peak of this ice sheet, because of his habits, he made very little sound. Adding to the fact that his current surroundings were absolutely silent, subconsciously, Shao Xuan had made sure he made little to no sound.

Even though his movements were very cautious, his speed was not slow.

Approaching the precipice where the giant eagles roosted, Shao Xuan decided not to go any further and instead proceeded horizontally.

To make sure he would not fall into a chasm, Shao Xuan had moved away from the edge.

Although Shao Xuan had calculated the vertical height of this peak, the horizontal distance could not be found out. Even if it had been when the fog had scattered, Shao Xuan would still not be able to determine such.

On the ice layer, the footprints of various giant creatures could be seen, and the ice columns they gnawed on had marks, some large, some small.

On this trip, Shao Xuan had also seen quite a few gigantic ice columns. Naturally, these ice columns would attract the attention of the giant eagles, as seen by the marks that were left on them. The majority of these marks were on the top of the columns. Approaching the bottom of the columns, only a few marks could be seen, if any at all, which showed that the giant eagles preferred not lowering their heads to eat.

As Shao Xuan proceeded, he suddenly caught scent of a jeering sound. Although it wasn't loud, due to the silent surroundings, this sound was quite obvious.

This noise wasn't that of the giant eagles. When the giant eagles moved around, they carried around with them a heavy feeling, as if they didn't have to be fearful of anything. At this moment, this sound caused Shao Xuan to immediately become cautious.

As the sound approached him, Shao Xuan hid behind an ice column, wary of the creature in the fog that was approaching closer and closer.

Gradually, the silhouette of a long creature grew clearer and clearer.

Snake?

No, this wasn't a snake.

This creature was not at the length of a snake. Furthermore, the movement of this creature was different. Upon a second glance, this creature seemed like an insect.

Stone worm?

In mountainous areas, stone worms are a frequent sight.

Yet quickly, Shao Xuan realized he was wrong.

This creature actually wasn't a stone worm. Rather, it looked like the larvae of butterflies.

This insect was thicker than Shao Xuan's thigh. Approaching four meters long, this creature was completely white. It had a round head, and connecting the head to the body, there was a "neck" that could constrict and contract.

Briefly looking at it, it seems that apart from it being a larger size, disregarding that they seemed to be butterfly larvae, there were no differences than that of a stone worm. But taking a closer look, Shao Xuan discovered many differences.

Through Shao Xuan's experiences, the butterfly larvae he had hunted had three abdomens with four pairs of feet and one tail. Yet this worm in front of him had three segments with three pairs of feet and three tails.

The abdomens and the tails had hooks, while their feet had suction cups. Previously, the sound that Shao Xuan had heard was the worm crawling across the ice layer.

What a strange worm.

Shao Xuan didn't expect that he would encounter this creature in such a frigid environment. Generally speaking, these worms should live in a warmer, more temperate climate.

Not being able to determine if this worm could attack, Shao Xuan did not make any movements. He just stood behind the ice column and observed the white worm that was slowly crawling closer.

After crawling a bit, it stopped. Using its feet and tail to prop its front section up, it appeared as if it recognized something and then proceeded to crawl in that direction.

The worm actually changed its direction to proceed directly towards the ice column that Shao Xuan was hiding behind.

Had he been discovered?

Becoming alert, he noiselessly put his hand on the handle of his sword.

However, the worm stopped in front of the ice column, and Shao Xuan started to hear crunching sounds.

Feeling the tremors travelling across the column, Shao Xuan knew that the worm was gnawing on the ice.

The worm's goal was merely the ice column, and it had not discovered Shao Xuan.

Between Shao Xuan and the worm, one was hiding on one side of the column, and the other was gnawing the ice on the other side. Shao Xuan did not poke out his head to observe, but simply relied on his hearing and the tremors reverberating through the column to confirm the worm's actions.

The crunching sound continued for roughly two hours as the worm switched locations in search of another ice column. Following the worm, at times when there was no column to hide behind, as long as he remained cautious, the worm wouldn't take note of him. In its eyes, it did not care for anything but food.

Shao Xuan discovered that the ice columns the worm chose were all thick, because those columns were also long, similar to the ice columns the giant eagles preferred. But instead of the preference for the top of the column, this worm preferred to gnaw on the bottom of them.

Could it be an obsession with cleanliness? Or is it that it feared the scent of these giant eagles?

Shao Xuan did not know.

But after confirming its preference for food, continuing to follow the worm, he displayed more skill.

Observing the ice columns that the worm gnawed on, Shao Xuan discovered that it ate extremely fast, without losing in speed to the giant eagles. Only, its bites were much smaller, but much faster, so the crunching sound was even more concentrated.

As the light grew dimmer and dimmer, only as it approached evening, did the worm stop its search for food as it crawled back home.

Shao Xuan continued to follow it.

The further he proceeded, the fog grew less and less dense.

At this time, Shao Xuan could see this white worm even clearer.

Where did it come from? Where was it going now?

Upon reaching the edge, the worm raised its body, then proceeded down the steep incline. The worm raised its front section, then its rear, two parts interchanging. While going down, the worm resembled an arch bridge.

It's abdomen and tail hooked onto the layer of ice and rock to prevent itself from falling down the steep incline. Looking down, Shao Xuan found the worm's speed to be fast and steady. To the worm, this steep incline was the same as a flat surface.

Taking note of the sky's color, Shao Xuan did not follow it, but rather turned back, gnawed on some ice and fell asleep.

The next day.

Once again, Shao Xuan caught sight of the worm. Following yesterday's route to the ice sheet, it once more went out seeking food.

Shadowing the worm, on the ice layer, Shao Xuan had not found another creature. Regarding such a peculiar looking specimen, Shao Xuan decided on observing it a bit more.

Every day, just when the sun started to rise, it would climb up the ice layer in search of ice columns not touched by the giant eagles. With every column that it gnawed on, it would only gnaw one-third of the column and would never snap it in half.

After five days of observation, Shao Xuan planned on following it after sunset.



Shao Xuan could easily traverse this steep incline as well.

The conditions on this incline were better than at the peak of the ice layer as the fog was less dense here. Back when traversing the apex of the ice layer, Shao Xuan had to stick tight to the wall as the ledge was extremely thin, and many times, it seemed like he was so high up, he could actually touch the sun.

As a precaution, Shao Xuan had left a lot of distance between him and the white worm. But soon, Shao Xuan found that when traversing the steep incline, the worm's speed vastly outstripped his own, and he quickly lost track of it.

After thinking for a bit, Shao Xuan once again returned to the ice layer.

Instead of following the white worm, Shao Xuan had decided upon traversing the steep incline when the worm was out looking for food.

The worm would leave behind marks where one could move across, and as long as Shao Xuan followed such marks, he could find out where the worm went every sunset.

On the incline where the worm crossed, there were deep holes from the worm's hooks.

Taking into account the worm's constitution and how it moved, finding such marks was quite easy. Adding the fact that it was daytime, the task grew even easier.

From the peak, Shao Xuan continuously proceeded down. From time to time, fierce winds would blow through the crevice bringing with it countless shards of ice crashing onto Shao Xuan. Shao Xuan could only helplessly proceed onwards. Furthermore, he had to display the utmost care while moving across. If he grew careless. and from this height fell down, then death was inevitable.

While flying up the mountain, Cha Cha and the giant eagle had used half a day, but after half a day of climbing, Shao Xuan had proceeded no more than one-third of the distance.

Only at this point, the marks that the white worm had made going down had

halted and instead, they proceeded to move horizontally.

Following these marks, he continued to look for more and finally, on top of a protruding block of stone, he discovered a nest padded with many threads.

Shao Xuan knew that some species of worms would spit out threads and use them to connect leaves together to make a “leaf nest”. Perhaps in this area, they would also make such a nest. When they needed to rest, they would hide in the nest and only when the sun rose did they come out to search for food.

In the mountainous areas surrounding the tribe, there would regularly be such occurrences. Sometimes, by peeling leaves apart, insects could be seen hiding inside.

And now, Shao Xuan found that the white worm had indeed made a nest here.

The threads were completely transparent and did not reflect light. If Shao Xuan had not followed these marks, he would never have discovered these elusive threads.

After touching and stretching them, he found that they were pretty good. Shao Xuan’s first impression was that these threads were perfect for traps, but he didn't know the durability of these threads.

But right now, Shao Xuan would not take them. Only after observing the worm would he do anything. After all, if the worm became alarmed, nothing good would come out of it.

---

# Chapter 143 - Butterfly

Translated by TheLorax

Edited by EvilGurl, Ilesyt, Kezza

---

On the protruding stone slab, behind the layer of threads, Shao Xuan indeed had found something interesting, a set of marks.

Carefully looking around once again, he couldn't even find a trace of their feces.

Originally believing that by travelling this far, at the end of everything, he would be rewarded with treasures, it turned out that the nest of the white insect was completely empty.

Shao Xuan once more traced the steep incline further down and couldn't find any more marks. Obviously this insect had not gone any deeper recently.

Finding the insect's nest, and nothing else, Shao Xuan decided to go back up. He started to walk, then he ceased his movements and began to think. Walking to a nearby rock he moved behind it, removed all traces of his existence, and waited.

Although there was sunlight, the never ending stream of ice and rocks was not pleasant, and the temperature didn't seem to get any warmer. On the

contrary, as the sun started to set, the temperature plummeted rapidly.

However, for someone who was already accustomed to the climate at the peak of the mountain, this coldness was bearable.

As the sun left only a sliver of light, the insect returned.

As every step required it to tightly grasp onto the ice and rock, the noise the insect made was uncontrollable. Shao Xuan had been resting with his eyes closed, but upon hearing activity coming his way, he immediately opened his eyes to observe.

With the vantage point Shao Xuan had secured, his vision of the insect was unobstructed.

Although the sun had already set, the light of the two moons in the sky allowed Shao Xuan to clearly see everything going on.

Upon eating its fill and returning, the first thing the insect did was excrete waste.

One by one, transparent balls of ice came out of the insect's rear end.

Finishing his business, the insect kicked each and every one of those balls down the cliff.

Shao Xuan was speechless. As expected, this insect had an obsession with cleanliness. It seemed to know not to defecate where it sleeps.

Finishing eating and defecating, the insect motionlessly lied down on its nest to rest.

Not even bothering to look, Shao Xuan leaned against the rock and fell asleep.

The next day, the insect had already left its nest before the sun appeared in the sky.

Following the insect, Shao Xuan ascended the mountain.

For the next few days, Shao Xuan did not venture back down, nor did he follow the insect. Instead, he proceeded to explore various locations on this ice layer. After familiarizing himself with the terrain, he proceeded to advance at an even quicker pace.

Some days later, Shao Xuan returned to his original location. He did not turn back, but because this ice layer was shaped like a ring, of course Shao Xuan would return to his original location. During this process, Shao Xuan had encountered more of those white insects; but he did not bother spending time on follow them.

After arriving back, looking around, Shao Xuan could not find any trace of the original insect.

Curious, Shao Xuan once again descended down the cliff. When he arrived at the insect's nest, he was just in time to catch sight of the insect molting.

Casting off its skin, the thread the insect produced was transparent.

Perhaps after transforming, the insect was tired. Only after resting for a while did the insect start moving and kicking its skin out of its nest.

Shao Xuan wanted to get ahold of that skin, because in the tribe, they were lacking in materials, and so, trying to get that skin would be worth the effort.

Originally worried that the skin would get swept away by the fierce wind, unexpectedly, after being kicked out of the nest, it fell straight down onto the ice, making a loud noise.

Seeing the hole smashed by the skin, Shao Xuan became dazed.

With the skin being this heavy, the insect must be even heavier! Who would've known?

The insect was still resting in its nest, so Shao Xuan couldn't just directly go down and take the skin. He had to wait for an opportunity.

And this opportunity would be during the next day.

Waiting for the sun to rise, while the insect had ascended up the mountain like a ghost, Shao Xuan went towards the skin to examine it. After last night, the skin had been covered in a blanket of snow.

Brushing the snow off, Shao Xuan picked up the skin. Weighing it in his hand, what he found was contrary to his expectations. But for a tribe of people who moves stones around, this amount of weight could be regarded as bearable.

The skin was so transparent, that when looking down, Shao Xuan could see even the wrinkles on his hand. When pulling with some strength, he found no damage.

As expected, this was something good.

Rolling up the skin, he tied it up and put it in his bag.

Looking around the nest, and not finding anymore remains, Shao Xuan returned back up the mountain.

Afterwards, Shao Xuan went to look for more of these insects. By following their footprints, he tracked their nests and acquired two more of these skins. From the other insects, he did not find any remains. Maybe they have not molted yet, or maybe they kicked their skin further away. The skins weren't in the vicinity of the nests, and looking at the lines in the snow, Shao Xuan inferred that they rolled far away.

During the time Shao Xuan was scavenging, he found that these insects were turning more and more transparent. Originally snow white, they turned translucent, and with every passing day they grew even more transparent.

Finally, when all of the insects had disappeared, Shao Xuan went looking in their nests and found that the white insect had turned into a cocoon.

In this state, the shells of the insects were also transparent and angular. If one was not paying attention, they might have mistaken them for blocks of ice.

Shao Xuan did not know how long the insects would be in their chrysalis state.



In the end, since he had memorized the locations of the nests, he decided to check on them every couple of days. For the rest of the time, Shao Xuan would slowly absorb the energy contained in the ice columns. Being in such a tranquil place, he felt himself becoming more peaceful, which was extremely suitable for absorbing energy.

The energy located in the ice column was quite ordinary as it wasn't as pure or strong as that found in the fire crystal. For Shao Xuan, the energy from the fire crystal could only have a supporting effect, as it did not affect the totem in his consciousness, one of the other differences between him and the other tribe members.

However, after every absorption of the energy found in the ice, a sliver of energy could be found accumulating in the totem. It had been precisely this type of energy which had been the root cause for the change(s) in the totem.

The two moons in the sky gradually circled, and drifted closer and closer to one another, brightening up the sky.

On this day, the two moons eclipsed.

From the clouds and mist on the mountain top, Shao Xuan was looking at the moon.

During his time in the tribe, he would constantly hear the cries of beasts in the forest. During his time here, all was quiet.

Unable to hear any life, it was as if he had been cut off from the world.

From the first hunt of the year to today, half a year had passed in the blink of an eye.

Suddenly, Shao Xuan felt activity from underneath him.

Recalling those cocoons, he decided to go down and see what was happening.

On this night, the light provided by the two eclipsed moons was comparable to daylight.

For both the wild and ferocious beasts, this night was truly peculiar.

And so, while descending down the mountain, Shao Xuan was unusually cautious.

Finally arriving at one of the nests, Shao Xuan saw an insect coming out of the nest that had grown comparably smaller than when it was a insect. This insect looked like a butterfly with two antennas and no wings.

Upon leaving its nest, it crawled to the protruding slab of rock. Suddenly emitting white light from within, the light molded into a growing pair of wings.

Becoming bigger, the wings blocked all view of the rock the insect was on.

Opening it's bright fluorescent wings, the butterfly rested for a while, then jumped off the rock, flapped its wings, and flew far away.

Looking out into the distance, there was a speck of white light gradually growing smaller.

In the end, the insects had all turned into butterflies.

With no stars in the sky, these bright wings appeared to be countless lights in the night.

Although there were still icy winds blowing around, these butterflies seemed to not be affected and steadily flew onwards.

Shao Xuan stood and watched these specks of light become increasingly small, to the point of disappearing. Only then did Shao Xuan retract his eyes and shift them towards their nest.

The threads were still there.

If left alone, after a while, they would be covered in ice and snow.

Coming over, Shao Xuan pulled on the threads to find that they weren't easily separated. After observing the previous skins, he found that they were extremely hard to pull, but after using his totem, it grew a lot easier.

Shao Xuan used the same method to obtain the other threads.

Originally, the threads were stuck so tightly onto the rock wall that they seemed to be a part of it, after using his totem power, all he needed to do was the use a bit of force to peel them off.

Contrasted by the insect's skin, this thread was incomparably light, causing Shao Xuan to grow excited.

Inside the nest and cocoon, Shao Xuan did not find anything. Could it be that the butterflies had kicked everything off the cliff? Could it be that they ate them?

It wasn't a big deal even if he couldn't find anything. For Shao Xuan, obtaining the threads was the biggest harvest for tonight.

Going to a few locations, the amount of thread he acquired was not small. To the insects, these threads weren't anything important, or else they would've taken it away with them. In a few locations, some threads had been nipped and blown away with the wind.

This task continued on for two days, and during this time, new giant eagles had appeared.

Just like when Chacha arrived, these eagles were extremely tired. It seemed

like they weren't in a good state, as if affected by the ravages of time and old age.

Since these eagles arrived, it let Shao Xuan know that perhaps Cha Cha would also arrive soon.

As the giant eagles once again assembled on this layer of ice, Shao Xuan could not move around freely. Staying in the location where he and Cha Cha had first landed, he then began to hide his presence.

And so, these days, Shao Xuan would either be biting on a piece of ice from the column or observing every passing eagle.

Currently eating, Shao Xuan realized something was amiss. Raising his head, the first thing he saw was a giant eagle flying down, landing directly in front of him.

The eagle's head was not far away from him, and it could see Shao Xuan extremely well.

Suddenly, their eyes met.

---

# Chapter 144 - A Foreign Object

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

That eagle was even bigger than that the one that had brought them here, and it looked like it had flown a long journey and was very tired. After he fell on the ice, he did not move any more, just gasped for air.

Originally, he was just randomly looking around and wasn't trying to find Shao Xuan. And then he just stared at Shao Xuan as if Shao Xuan was a rarity.

Shao Xuan, who held a piece of ice and was about to nibble at it, just stopped when he found that he was being stared at by the giant eagle.

What the hell did the eagle want to do?

Shao Xuan did not see malice in the eye of the eagle, but he was still wondering what the eagle wanted.

The eagle stared at Shao Xuan for a while and then diverted his sight to the ice column next to Shao Xuan, and then looked at Shao Xuan.

Did he want to eat ice?

Shao Xuan took out his tooth sword and pried off a block of ice from the ice

column. When he turned around, he found the eagle was staring at his tooth sword.

Shao Xuan thought for a short while, and then inserted tooth sword into the ice layer. He held up the ice block and showed it to the eagle.

Shao Xuan wanted to throw the ice block to the eagle along the ice layer. But the eagle directly opened his beak and then shook his curved beak, as if urging Shao Xuan to be quick.

Shao Xuan moved over towards the eagle, step by step. Even if the eagle didn't show malice, Shao Xuan thought he still needs to be cautious when he faced a behemoth like this, especially in the situation that he did not carry his tooth sword.

When Shao Xuan was close to the eagle, he threw the ice block into the mouth of the eagle quickly, and trotted back immediately.

The eagle directly swallowed up the ice block without chewing it. And then, he opened his mouth once again.

Shao Xuan pried off another ice block and threw it into the mouth of the eagle. He went back and forth for more than ten times. Finally, the eagle quivered his wings and stood up from the ground.

When the eagle flapped his large wings and was about to fly up, plenty of ice particles dropped off from his body and some fell on Shao Xuan. Shao Xuan raised his hands to keep them away.

At that time, Shao Xuan thought of something. He thought this eagle didn't seem to be unfamiliar with humans, unlike the eagle that brought them here. The reason he was stunned when he saw Shao Xuan may be because he did not expect to find a human in this place.

Could the eagle live in the mountain forest around their tribe's hunting ground?

Suddenly, one thing attracted Shao Xuan's sight. He could not help but go forward a few steps and stare at one claw of the eagle. A blurry pattern was drawn on it.

Even if Shao Xuan could not see it clearly, he was certain that the pattern was not from Flaming Horns tribe.

Relating it to the behavior of the eagle just now, Shao Xuan thought the eagle must have contact with humans. Like Chacha, there were too many humanized things in this eagle's eyes. He must have contact with humans frequently, for he had acted in a way the other eagles did not.

The giant eagle walked with heavy steps towards a taller ice column and bit the ice block on it.

Shao Xuan followed and walked close to the eagle. He wanted to see the pattern on his claw clearly.

But the pattern was incomplete, because the outside layer of the claw had fallen off partly. Shao Xuan had to guess the missing part of the pattern.

Shao Xuan felt a thrill when he thought this pattern might be left by another tribe.



He had been in this world for so long and never seen a human from another tribe.

Shao Xuan drew on the ground with his tooth sword. The eagle next to him had finished eating and seemed much better than before, when he couldn't even stand up.

He lowered his head and looked at Shao Xuan drawing on the ground. At first, he was quiet, but later, every once Shao Xuan drew a stroke, he made a sound and scratched the picture with his claw.

“Wrong? Let me try again.....”

But he just continued a few strokes, and the eagle scratched it again.

“Wrong again. Draw again.”

Shao Xuan drew and drew, while the eagle scratched and scratched. After a while, the ice in the surroundings was scratched into a mess. At this time, the eagle lost his patience. He stopped scratching, cried a sound towards Shao Xuan, and began to twitch his neck.

“Wait! What do you want!”

At the sight of such a situation, Shao Xuan hurriedly stepped back!

“Waooh~~.”

A pile of puke dropped in front of Shao Xuan. If Shao Xuan avoided it a little slower, this puke would have just fallen on his head.

In the puke, there were some pieces of meat from body parts of unknown animals.

Shao Xuan: “....”

He was wondering whether he needed to run, but a stone in the puke caught his sight.

It was a stone which was polished smoothly and was about palm-sized.

Shao Xuan ignored the revolting puke and ran fast to pull out the smooth

stone from it.

When he picked up the stone, he wiped it by using the feather of the eagle, and then he looked at it carefully from the side.

The stone was black and flat, and a white pattern was drawn on it. Shao Xuan thought the white pattern might be the same as that on the claw of the eagle.

The pattern looked like an abstract cloud. The painting materials for the pattern were strange, the pattern could still stay clear, even in the belly of the eagle, the stone was not damaged at all.

Shao Xuan didn't know why the eagle swallowed the stone, and also could spit it out spontaneously. What interested Shao Xuan was where the pattern and the stone came from?

The eagle looked at the stone gently.

However, the eagle could not speak, and Shao Xuan could not understand the eagles' language. Shao Xuan could only guess the eagle's meaning from his body movements. Yes, he spit out the stone to show the correct pattern to Shao Xuan when he saw Shao Xuan drew it wrong time and time again.

The stone was very nice. It must be cut from superior natural stones.

The superior stone and the special painting materials were used for the pattern, so the pattern must be very important for the painter. It might be a totem. Shao Xuan could feel the painter's admiration for the pattern when he saw the stone.

He did not know whether the eagle lived in a human tribe like Chacha. Probably because the pattern could not be carved, it was drawn on the claw.

Shao Xuan hadn't seen this pattern in mountain caves near his tribe. But maybe he could find some relevant information in the animal skins that the ancestors left.

He must draw the same pattern for the Shaman when he returns to the tribe.

Thinking of it, Shao Xuan gave the stone back to the eagle. But the eagle lowered his head and pushed the stone back to Shao Xuan with his beak.

"You want to give it to me?" Shao Xuan asked in a low voice. There were other eagles walking back and forth, and Shao Xuan did not want to disturb them.

The eagle cried a sound and turned around his head. He walked towards the ice column he was eating and leaned against it. His eyes were clear and bright, and his breath was energetic. He was not hurt seriously, and there was no bone fracture in him. He was just very tired and could not stand straight.

Leaning against the ice column, he could bite the ice column easily.

Shao Xuan smiled and shook his head. He must have flown a long way, and experienced many hardships.

Shao Xuan had a look at the stone and put it carefully into the bag made of animal skins. He will show it to the Shaman when he returns. It would be great if they could find some related information from the scrolls.

At first, Shao Xuan planned to find another stone and draw the totem of his tribe on it, he would give the stone to the eagle for exchange. But after thinking over it, he gave up on it. Even if there were other tribes, he could not be certain if his tribe had bred enmity with these tribes. Therefore, he could not act rashly.

There were many giant mountain eagles flying here and there. Some eagles flew here alone, and others flew here in groups.

But because of the eagle standing next to Shao Xuan, the other eagles did not

fly over here to grab the area, and they even ignored the existence of Shao Xuan.

The eagles around became more and more quiet, and even the eagle that stood next to Shao Xuan was the same. Except for eating, he didn't do anything, and just stood next to the ice column quietly. It seemed that he did not want to make contact with the world. Occasionally Shao Xuan spoke with him, but he just made a low sound.

When the mist became thin, Shao Xuan knew it was time for the eagles to leave.

There was now sunshine at the ice region, and the mist had dissipated completely. Familiar songs of eagles rang out again.

Whoosh~~

Whoosh~~

One after another, large and vigorous figures appeared in the sky above. Those eagles sang in a loud voice to express their excited emotions, as if celebrating their new lives.

“Jiao~~!”

The eagle standing next to Shao Xuan screamed towards Shao Xuan, and started to fly.

“Good luck to you!” Shao Xuan waved his hands towards the eagle.

“Jiao~~!”

Another eagle scream. But this scream was not coming from the eagle next to Shao Xuan, but from the sky.

Shao Xuan put his fingers into his mouth and whistled.

A silhouette separated himself from the flying eagle group and flew towards Shao Xuan.

They had not met for such a long time, and Shao Xuan did not even recognize Chacha.

Chacha was not so tall the last time they saw each other. Now, his had grown double, and he was three meters tall.

The eagles in the ice region started to fly towards the chasm, while Shao Xuan and Chacha needed to return to their tribe.

Another nearby scream came from the sky. It was from the eagle that had brought them here. His body had also grown twice, and his beak had become sharp again, his claws also became sharp, and his wings became strong. He didn't look old any more. On the contrary, he was full of youthfull energy.

That eagle cried another sound towards Shao Xuan and Chacha, and flew far away. After a short while, he disappeared in the sky.

"We should go back!" Shao Xuan patted Chacha, who now was fluttering his wings on purpose to show them to Shao Xuan. Then they walked to the sharp declining slope.

Now, Shao Xuan didn't need to grab Chacha's claw to fly. He could directly jump on Chacha's back. But before he did that, he needed to fetch something.

"Wait! I need to get something."

Shao Xuan walked downwards along the sharp declining slope and stopped at a site. Then, he dug the soil by using his tooth sword. Chacha helped him with digging using his claws

Chacha could only dig very shallowly when he used his claws before. Now, he could grasp a big block of stone easily with his claws. It was much more easier for him to scratch ice block, just like scratching some bean curd.

Soon, the skin of the white bugs and the collected silk that Shao Xuan had buried were all dug out by Shao Xuan.

The skins and silk were intact and in good condition.

“They are very important, can you carry them?” Asked Shao Xuan, who held up the three rolls of skins.

“Jiao~~~”

“Ok. Let’s try.”

Shao Xuan, who carried the three scrolls of skins and silk clusters, jumped unto Chacha’s back.

“Take off!”

“Jiao~~~”

After releasing a scream, Chacha jumped down.

Shao Xuan turned around to see the mountain peak again.

The mountain peak was shrouded in clouds and mist.

Ten million years later, the ice region in the mountain peak still went through the cycle of greeting the new and seeing the old leave, day after day. Eagles come with poor and old bodies, but leave as new lives.

---

# Chapter 145 - The Guy Came Back

Translated by Sunyancai

Edited by Ilesyt

---

It is to be said that although Chacha had not changed as much like the other older giant eagles, he had benefited a lot from this travel, with his body size increasing clearly, and his flying speed improving greatly. He could fly easily, even while carrying a man and some heavy items on his back.

After flying down from the mountain, Shao Xuan was unable to see the figures of the other giant eagles. It was time for each one to leave and go to their homes.

They would not fight each other until the day they reached their region. At that time, they might recall something like, "Oh, it's you. We were in the same batch entering the eagle mountain."

Maybe they would never meet each other again their whole life.

Thanks to this travel, Shao Xuan saw the legendary eagle mountain, the so-called sacred land for the giant eagles, and their enormous changes after transforming, and also got some rare treasures. More importantly, it was the first time that he had seen an item from an external tribe.



So it was indeed a worthwhile trip.

Though Chacha grew bigger and flew faster, it was inevitable to get into trouble without the protection of a larger giant eagle. So it took them more time on the return journey.

Nevertheless, Shao Xuan got much joy from the battles on the way home. When he stayed in the ice field on the mountaintop, he spent most of the time sitting there quietly and absorbing the energy of the ice. For a while, he could run about, before the arrival of a new batch of giant eagles. With the increasing giant eagles in the ice field, he dared not to move around.

During the days in the ice region, Shao Xuan even found that the totem pattern on his arm had extended to his elbow unwittingly. On the way back, he took the opportunity to fight with ferocious beasts. Of course, he was not that arrogant to challenge those stronger than him. Except for unexpected enemies, every opponent was selected through cautious analysis by Shao Xuan for fighting practice.

Shao Xuan was injured by them many times, and even encountered fatal attacks from those ferocious beasts that were adept in hiding. All this hadn't happened on their way to the eagle mountain. It should be contributed to the protection of the experienced giant eagle. Otherwise Shao Xuan and the tiny giant mountain eagle, Chacha, might have been eaten by the ferocious beasts and turned into their dung.

It was far beyond Shao Xuan's expectation how dangerous the mountain forests actually were. In retrospect, it was indeed a bold and reckless decision to leave the tribe with Chacha before.

Alertness needed to be developed by experiencing dangerous battles over and over again. Instinct would be gradually weakened by long-term stability and peace, and could only be regained by experiencing a bloody battle again.

However, Chacha was too aggressive and vengeful in regards to the twig-like snakes in the forest. On their return journey, he often searched for small snakes as food since he was no match for the bigger ones.

After feeding on ice for nearly a year, Shao Xuan nearly broke into tears when eating hot beast meat roasted with fire again, as did Chacha. He was quite

ferocious when biting and pecking the meat, as if somebody had been vying for it.

After calculating the days, Shao Xuan guessed that it might be winter when they returned to the tribe.

“Do you miss Old Ke, Caesar, and the other people in the tribe?” Shao Xuan tapped Chacha, who was tearing the meat, and asked.

Chacha suddenly stopped and seemed to be recalling. Then he let out a cry and continued tearing the meat more fiercely, even spilling blood in a large area.

Shao Xuan speculated that he must have thought of the beasts which had been successfully branded and intended to beat them up when arriving at the tribe.

At the sight of the familiar “Severing Land”, Shao Xuan and Chacha became eager to return to the tribe, but they still stayed prudent and alert in case of danger.

They travelled past the land of thorns and arrived at the third hunting area, where they didn’t meet the hunting group. The group must have already returned. According to the traces left in the cave, it could be inferred that the group just left here 3 or 4 days before. Despite the perilous hunting area, this finding made Shao Xuan and Chacha feel inexplicably relieved.

Shao Xuan and Chacha rested for one night in the cave and set off again the next day.

They had once thought the huge mountain separating the first and second hunting area unscalable, but they changed their mind after having seen the mountain range beside the eagle mountain.

They chose to climb the mountain directly instead of walking through the passage.

After flying through the layers of cloud, they encountered the familiar freezing mist.

“Come on, we are conquering it!”

“Jiao~~”

When standing at the top of the mountain, Shao Xuan didn't suffer the chest tightness or shudder at the extremely low temperature here. It seemed that all this became easier to adapt to.

“Let's go home.” Said Shao Xuan.

Chacha pushed off the ground vigorously with his claws and flapped his wings to fly.

The situation in the tribe was as follows.

This year's hunting activity had finished. Everyone was busy preparing their roofs for the coming winter. The Shaman said that they had to seize the time, because the winter would come tomorrow.

Standing on Caesar's back with one leg, Old Ke was reinforcing some parts of the window.

After hammering for a while, Old Ke stopped to heave a sigh and descended from Caesar's back. He casually threw the stone hammer to the ground and then sat down, staring at the distance in a trance.

“Caesar, when do you think Ah-Xuan will come back? Winter is coming.” Old Ke asked in a whisper.

Caesar seemed to understand what Old Ke had said. With drooping ears, he smelled around the house, and then came back to grovel on the ground beside Old Ke, listening to his sighs.

“If Ah-Xuan hadn't left, he would have been one of the 30 people to explore a new hunting route. Surely, the Shaman would have selected Ah-Xuan. But Ah-Xuan left and hasn't come back yet. The honor fell on Lei. What a pity!” Old Ke complained.

What a great honor it is for a tribal warrior to explore a new hunting route. It is said that the two teams on the mountain even fought over the selection.

Even people living at the mountain foot could hear it.

It is also said that the Shaman was just watching the fight silently instead of stopping them. Thus it was speculated that the Shaman made the selection according to their fighting ability, and the 30 people selected were the winners of the fight.

However, nobody at the mountain foot saw the process in person. So their discussion was wholly based on hearsay and imagination.

If it had went according previous customs, their speculation would have been correct, but in fact, the truth was merely shared by a few people.

“Uncle Ke, I bring you some food.”

Tuo came to bring some processed food by the Shaman’s order.

He heard Old Ke’s complaint. As someone who lives up in the mountain and one of the participants in the exploration of the new hunting route, he certainly knew more clearly about the truth than any others.

At that time, the Chief, the Shaman, the two team leaders, and some influential old men gathered together to discuss about the selection, which led to a quarrel. It was a nature of the men in the tribe that excitement would turn quarrels into a fight.

And then, other people on the mountain were summoned to take part in the fight between the two parties. Different from usual practice, the fight developed into a large-scale internal conflict beyond imagination. Some warriors were left behind in the tribe for recuperation and probably could not go out for hunting until the end of winter.

However, the Shaman appeared too calm, scaring Ta and Gui He. They didn’t notice that when joining in the fight, but at the end of the fight, they found that the appearance of the Shaman had become quite strange.

It looked neither sad or angry, but a little absent-minded. It seemed that he paid no attention to the fight between the two strongest parties of the tribe.

Not just the two teamleaders, even the old men, who were quite arrogant about their seniority and influential ancestors, dared not to keep quarreling. Others also retreated from quarrelling and fighting, as if their anger had been extinguished by a basin of cold water.

The Shaman said nothing when he left. He just wrote down the 30 names submitted by the two parties on a volume, and then calmly went back to rest.

Afterwards, many people admitted their mistakes and asked for punishment, but the Shaman still wore a smile as usual.

Those who had known the Shaman for a long time could see that he had some worries, but even the oldest of them could not tell what he was worrying about.

The two teamleaders thought that the Shaman would be cheered up by their achievements in exploring the new hunting route, but he wasn't as emotional as they had imagined. However, being curious about it, the Chief and the old men failed to get any answer from the Shaman.

"Alas!" Tuo heaved a sigh. Then he left the food to Old Ke and went back.

At the front door, Old Ke thanked Tuo for the food and then sat back, speaking to Caesar.

All of a sudden, Caesar spang up from the ground and stared at the sky in one direction with his ears rising upright.

Old Ke followed Caesar's sight and found that it was in the direction of the hunting area.

Is it possible that...

Old Ke suddenly stood up and said, "Caesar, take me to..."

Before he finished, Caesar rushed out as quickly as a shooting arrow.

Old Ke was left dumbfounded.

Tuo was lost in thought with his head hanging down. When he arrived at the

mountainside, an eagle scream from distance stopped him. He looked at the silhouette in the sky with his eyes popping out.

Gosh! The guy came back!

Tuo hurriedly went up the mountain to tell the Shaman the good news. He hoped that it would cheer him up.

Standing at the front door, Old Ke nearly broke into tears when staring at the approaching silhouette in the sky, with the crutch in his hand shivering with excitement.

Up on the mountain, some beasts, either rolling for fun or stealing food, all stopped to run out of their houses and looked up to the sky.

The Shaman walked out from the stone house and stood at the front door, smiling to the descending silhouette and the guy on its back. The silhouette was much larger than in his memory.

Every time a giant mountain eagle went to the sacred land, it would grow to a higher stage. And then it would become larger and stronger, and could fly higher and farther.

When Shao Xuan and Chacha left the tribe, the tribe was holding this year's first hunting activity. Today, they returned home just one day before winter.

The two guards at the front door winked to each other in amazement because it had been a long time since the Shaman smiled so happily.

---

# Chapter 146 - Sparring Again

Translated by TheLorax

Edited by EvilGurl, Ilesyt, Kezza

---

Chacha landed directly in front of the door, while Caesar was running back and forth, chasing after them.

Jumping off of Chacha's back, Shao Xuan went up to Old Ke and gave him a big hug.

"I'm back!"

"It's good that you're back!" Old Ke said while pounding Shao Xuan on his shoulder, "You've gotten stronger!"

Sweeping his eyes across the room as he entered, he found that nothing had changed since he had left. Only beside a wooden crate on the ground, were there countless grinded stone tools piled up high. These were Old Ke's masterpieces.

Feeling left out, Caesar interrupted with his whining and moaning.

"Long time no see, old friend." Seeing the shoulder height, two meter long Caesar, Shao Xuan started rubbing his head.



After calming down from the excitement, Old Ke realized something was strange. Outside the house, Chacha was just loitering around.

He had previously been able to enter the room, but now, obviously he couldn't. Even without expanding his wings, he would still be too big. Even when Caesar entered the house, he had to be careful. If he misstepped, he might step on something, or knock over the table.

"This is Chacha?" With gleaming eyes, Old Ke walked forward on his crutches.

They had left for less than a year and Chacha had already become this big?

After fetching some water and taking a bath, Shao Xuan changed into clean clothes. Old Ke had already prepared a pot of meat soup with some fruit found in the mountain. Shao Xuan found the taste of the first mouthful to be quite strange, but after becoming used to it, he began savouring it more and more.

During the time they were gone they needed to be careful, so even if they used fire to cook, they would be forced to do so quickly. Many times, they couldn't even finishing cooking before encountering a situation. So while travelling, as long as there was food, it would be considered good, don't even mention meat soup. Even when arriving at Eagle Mountain, Shao Xuan was forced to gnaw on the ice. In such an environment, battered by the freezing winds, even his teeth started shivering.

It had been about a year since he had last tasted hot soup. When a bowl was placed in front of him he quickly gulped it all down, leaving his whole body feeling warm and satisfied, while his exhaustion was swiftly dispelled.

Now that he had returned home, he felt his heart becoming at peace.

While eating, Old Ke updated Shao Xuan on matters regarding the tribe since he was gone. With Shao Xuan gone, Old Ke could only complain each day to Caesar. While cracking some nuts found around the tribe, he threw them into Chacha's mouth.

Once he was finished with his soup, and after eating a few pieces of meat, Shao Xuan wiped his mouth. Towards Old Ke he said, "You should rest at home, I'll go up the mountain for a bit."

"Up the mountain? What are you going to do?" Old Ke nervously asked. The

conflict between the two hunting groups had escalated since he had left. Listening to the stories told by those that went up the mountain, there seemed to be intense fights everyday.

“I’m going to look for the Shaman.” Shao Xuan replied.

“Alright, you should visit him.” Hearing his reason, Old Ke relaxed. “You go now. Since it’s not early anymore, I’ll make plans to build Chacha a nest in the morning. Ai! Luckily there is quite a bit of wood inside the house. A few days ago, Tu and Jie Ba helped cut a few trees down.”

Thinking that it had been a while since he had seen Tu and Jie Ba, a smile appeared on Shao Xuan's face. "Use the wood. If there's not enough I'll cut more, or I'll get Chacha to pull down a few trees."

Not bringing Caesar or Chacha along, Shao Xuan left the house, greeting familiar faces along the way.

Inside the tribe, quite a few people had caught sight of the flying eagle, but because the distance had been far, apart from those below the mountain and those living near Shao Xuan, not many people had become aware of how big Chacha had grown.

When Shao Xuan was halfway up the mountain, he was halted by a rough voice.

Hearing this, Shao Xuan looked towards the source, "Keke."

The person who was calling out was Keke. When Tuo went to inform his friend about Shao Xuan's arrival, Keke had already come to know about it. Originally, Keke was going to wait until the next day to seek Shao Xuan out; who knew that while lazily lying on his roof, he would be able to coincidentally meet him.

Catching sight of Keke, Tuo hurried over, hoping to avoid Shao Xuan getting injured again.

"Haha, long time no see. You've gotten taller, has your strength improved as well?" Keke asked as though he was an older brother. Using his full strength to pat Shao Xuan's shoulder, his actions differed from that of Old Ke's. When Old Ke was patting him, although Old Ke was excited, he controlled his strength, making sure he wouldn't harm Shao Xuan. However, when Keke was patting him, Shao Xuan was forced to use his totem to bear the force or else he would've been injured.

Not waiting for Shao Xuan to respond, Keke continued, "Come on, you've finally come back, let me see how much you've improved."

Not being able to go out for a couple days, Keke's hands had started itching

for a fight. These days, he would always use the pretense of “training” to fight.

Tuo felt a headache coming on. As he prepared to pull Keke away, he didn't expect to hear Shao Xuan agreeing.

What?

His eyes were wide open as he looked at Shao Xuan nodding; shouldn't this youngster be declining? Could it be that he had forgotten that last time Keke had broken his arm? He didn't even hesitate in accepting!

In the tribe, it was known that as long as both sides agreed, it would be hard for others to interrupt. Sighing, Tuo could only step back and watch what happened.

And so, the three people moved to an open piece of land. That way, even if things got out of hand, not too many people would be affected.

“You first.” It was rare to see Keke act like a senior, but these past few years, this kind of behavior was beaten into him by Tuo and their team leader.

“Fine.” Shao Xuan didn't have any objections.

While he warmed up his legs, Shao Xuan decided to fight directly. Because he wasn't trying to do a sneak attack he indicated that he was about to start.

Keke lifted up his chin, calmly standing still. He did not think that Shao Xuan had the ability to hurt him. Not only had he absorbed the fire crystals, but having also experienced countless hunts and becoming an intermediate totem warrior, his strength had far surpassed those at the mountain foot, he was confident this included Shao Xuan.

Today, his purpose was to see how much Shao Xuan had improved, and if his strength wasn't bad, they could “properly discuss” things with Gui He and the other people who had come up with the list of 30 warriors to explore the new trail. It just so happened that one of the people on the list had been injured.

Just the thought of being able to clash with him strengthened Keke all over. Looking into Shao Xuan’s eyes, he tried to convey a sense of urgency; after Keke quickly dealt with him, he would find other people to cause trouble to.

Taking a deep breath, Shao Xuan’s legs suddenly stomped on the ground, resembling that of the ferocious beasts. The stone below his feet suddenly cracked, and with every stride, it brought more and more shattered rocks, causing the dust to rise up.

If his hunting group was watching, they'd realize that this wasn't Shao Xuan’s normal style. While hunting, he would be hiding in the dark, waiting for the opportune moment to strike the fatal blow. Yet now, Shao Xuan was extremely straightforward, not planning on playing any tricks.

Directly meeting with him, Keke started a bit. This child has the air of those ferocious beasts in the mountains, violent and direct.

Seeing him like this, Keke thought Shao Xuan shouldn't be too far away from Lei, almost approaching the level of an intermediate warrior? Perhaps in one or two years, he could step across this boundary. No wonder why the shaman always looked at him favorably.

While Keke was deep in his thoughts, Shao Xuan finally brandished his fists towards him. Not even bothering to avoid him, Keke put his arms in front and directly blocked the punch.

With the collisions between fist and arm, a loud sound rang throughout the surroundings

Peng!

After colliding, Keke’s pupils shrank. He felt his arms burning with pain. Originally standing straight and steady, the hit made him waver for a bit, forcing

his legs to take a step back.

Although he only retreated a bit, Tuo knew that Keke's condition wasn't good.

Not giving him enough time to recover from his surprise, Shao Xuan pressed on. Due to the totem's power, his arms expanded. Balling his fingers into a fist, he once again raised his arms and smashed towards Keke.

Peng!

From this collisions, Keke once again had to retreat back and stabilize his body. While moving back, his eyes were intently watching Shao Xuan.

How could he have changed so much?!

He tried to recall what had previously prompted the team leader to order him to probe this child.

Unable to remember, he hazily recalled that back then, Shao Xuan didn't have this much strength. With a single fist, he was able to send Shao Xuan flying. When he wasn't careful, he accidentally broke Shao Xuan's arm...

Facing the increasingly quicker fists, Keke was so shocked he didn't even remember to find a opportunity to fight back. He was still confident he could handle him; but how was this child so strong?

How could this be possible.....

Facing these barrages, with every hit, Keke would incessantly retreat back, withdrawing more and more as time went by.

The stones cracking on the ground sounded like thunder roaring in the sky as countless bits and pieces flew up in the sky.

Peng! Ka cha!

Once again, sounds from the collisions between Shao Xuan's fists rang out, and once again, Keke had to retreat back.

Watching from the sides, Tuo couldn't believe what he was witnessing. Seeing Shao Xuan repeatedly knock Keke away, Tuo took a big gulp.

But also, the sound from the most recent strike was.....

Could it be? Tuo felt his head becoming dizzy.

Catching his breath, Shao Xuan stood still, watching the beat up Keke. Then moving his shoulder, he once more resumed his onslaught, the loud cracking of bones resounding.

Shao Xuan's muscles were faintly throbbing after dealing so many rapid strikes to a intermediate totem warrior. Yet he still felt he had boundless strength radiating out. Compared to before, where he was immediately suppressed, this feeling was much better.

And there, lying down was Keke, mumbling incoherent words. Keke felt his legs twitching, but even worse was that his arms, without a doubt, were broken.

Throughout the fight and while getting injured, Keke had an expression of disbelief. However, Keke quickly came back to his senses and turned towards Shao Xuan, who was planning on leaving. Hurriedly, he voiced, "Ai, wait wait, Ah Xuan, wait a few days for me to heal my injuries, I'll come and look for you and we'll fight again!"

Shao Xuan didn't turn back. Waving his hand, he continued up the mountain.

Standing out of view, not far from where Shao Xuan and Keke had fought,

Lei's expressions turned gloomy.

Originally, the spot in the 30 man group to explore the new route was given to Shao Xuan by the Shaman, but since he hadn't returned, Lei's grandpa managed to steal it over him.

And now that Shao Xuan had returned, it seems that he's going to visit the Shaman. Could it be that he was going to steal the spot back?

No, absolutely not!

However, after seeing Shao Xuan and Keke's exchange, could he overcome him?

While deep in thought, Lei ran back, planning to tell his grandpa everything.



---

# Chapter 147 - Agitation

Translated by TheLorax

Edited by EvilGurl, Ilesyt, Kezza

---

The Shaman seemed to already know that Shao Xuan was ascending the mountain, so he was simply waiting for him to arrive.

When the people guarding the Shaman's house saw Shao Xuan arrive, their faces were filled with smiles.

“The Shaman is waiting for you inside.” One man said.

“Thanks.” Shao Xuan responded while walking inside.

Seeing the Shaman seated, Shao Xuan felt that the Shaman was extremely exhausted. Not in a physical sense, but rather in his spirit. Though only a year had passed, the Shaman looked countless years older.

Walking towards the low stone table and sitting down, he asked: “How have you been?”

Smiling and nodding, the wrinkles on the Shaman’s face grew even more pronounced.

The Shaman felt very pleased as he observed Shao Xuan, “Your journey, how

was it?”

“Pretty good, I have experienced so much that I’m unable to tell you everything. Later on I’ll draw it for you. You’ll need to provide the roll and the ink as I don’t have any in my possession.”

Although Shao Xuan said he would draw it, since there were so many experiences, he couldn't possibly draw them all. And so, he would pick a few to show.

Choosing the eagle guide, the elevated mountain range, the ice field, the mysterious Eagle Mountain, and the strange white insects, Shao Xuan would meticulously draw these events.

The Shaman recalled the ancestor’s accounts as he was listening. His face became serious as he deeply pondered over Shao Xuan’s report. He was extremely quiet while Shao Xuan spoke, afraid that if he interrupted he would miss vital information.

Even after Shao Xuan had finished, the Shaman was still deeply thinking, only moving after some time had passed.

“Eagle Mountain, the legends are true.” The Shaman exclaimed.

That year, when he had seen that Shao Xuan had obtained that small bird, he instantly knew that the bird would grow to reach extreme heights.

Shao Xuan had asked him before if he had thought about leaving the tribe in search for people outside.

In actuality, the Shaman had already thought about it. This was what every Shaman would dream about, but what none could succeed at. Yet after seeing the eagle for the first time, the Shaman had an idea. If there was a day where this eagle fully matured, he could fly across and reach the lands that even the warriors of the tribe could not.

Within the ancestor’s records, the mountain peaks housed the giant eagles who feared nothing. When looking from such great heights, their thoughts wouldn’t be to retreat, but rather to conquer.

In every hunting group, there are those that are incapable of surmounting the

peak that was obstructing the road ahead. And so, when they are hunting, they would always avoid it. Even back when the ancestors attempted to explore the path, they too avoided it. Unless they could find a passageway through the mountain, they would need to make a long detour.

The other tribe members didn't know that when the ancestors were first trying to open new routes, that they were met with so many obstacles that they were forced to give up, leaving it to the next generation.

The things stopping the warriors were not the ferocious beasts, but rather the tall mountain range and the expansive river. Both were dangerous places.

But if there was a method to directly fly over the range or river, like a giant eagle could, all their obstructions would be gone.

If the eagle was fortunate enough to mature, then even if the dream isn't reached within the Shaman's lifetime, he would still write it down on the animal hide, transferring it to the next Shaman, and then the next, so that even if several hundred years pass, one day, they'll succeed.

Ever since he had first met Chacha, the amount of care that the Shaman had given him was far greater than that given to Caesar.

He never imagined that Shao Xuan could bring Chacha and discover Eagle Mountain, letting Chacha complete his first stage of growth!

It had renewed the Shaman's hope.

He had already been fully vested in a new route for several years. Now that Shao Xuan had raised the subject of people outside the tribe and shown him proof they existed, then the new route and other matters paled in importance. Especially the conflict between Ta and Gui He.

Only, he couldn't tell anyone else yet. After all, in the eyes of the other tribesmen, these things were all illusory. Being the spiritual leader of the tribe, if he wasn't certain of something, then he couldn't act.

"Good! Very good! Ah Xuan, the next time you come here, bring Chacha with you."

"En, I'll bring him along next time. It's just he's gotten very big, Chacha won't be able to fit inside this house." Shao Xuan responded.

Hearing that Chacha had become unable to fit inside his house, the Shaman's smile became so wide that his eyes became slits; he was unable to wait to examine him.

Looking at how cheerful the Shaman was, Shao Xuan scratched at the

goosebumps on his arms. He wanted to say something to the Shaman, but right now, the Shaman was being extremely emotional. This matter, should Shao Xuan say it now, or maybe later? At the Shaman's old age, could he handle more shock?

"Hm, could there be something else?" Asked the Shaman as his smile receded.

"This...well...how far away do you think the other tribes are?" Shao Xuan asked.

The Shaman's smile returned. Full of excitement he replied, "As long as Chacha matures, we can find this out. Trust me, there will be a day when this happens."

And then, the Shaman became downcast as he sighed: "Only... I don't know if I'll be able to see this happen in my lifetime."

Shao Xuan kept quiet, he just reached into his bag and took out the stone that the giant eagle gifted him, setting it on top of the stone table.

Before returning, Shao Xuan had carefully cleaned the stone up, removing all of the weird odors from it.

When the Shaman saw the object Shao Xuan had placed on the table, he halted.

As if frozen, he maintained this stillness, not even changing his expression. Only the Shaman's eyes were staring intently at the flat, fist sized stone.

“This... this...” The Shaman wanted to say something, yet he couldn't make a sound, as if he had something stuck in his throat.

“Ah, is something wrong? Calm down, just calm down a bit! Take deep breaths, inhale!” Shao Xuan was frightened as he rushed up and started patting the Shaman on the back. “Deep breaths, like this. Huuuuu~”

The Shaman pushed Shao Xuan aside with his hand, his whole body shaking. Lifting his trembling hand, he extended it towards the piece of stone. He was shaking so strongly that if he was holding a soup ladle, then all the soup would've spilled.

When the Shaman had returned back to normal, Shao Xuan sat back down.

“I haven't finished talking, this piece of stone was gifted to me by a very large eagle, he almost spat on me...” Shao Xuan explained how he discovered the totem on the eagle's leg, and how he fed the eagle.

As if handling something extremely precious, the Shaman carefully touched the stone, silently listening to Shao Xuan.

Only after Shao Xuan finished did the Shaman pick up the stone, carefully examining the many patterns on it.

On the stone appeared to be a rolling cloud. Recalling his memories, he told Shao Xuan the reason why he was so excited to the point of shaking, “On one of the ancestor's scrolls, I remembered this picture. Wait a second, let me go find it.”

The Shaman disappeared so quickly that Shao Xuan felt a gust of wind blow in front of him. Very soon he came back, picked the stone up from the table, and disappeared once more.

While looking at his surroundings, waiting patiently, Shao Xuan stood up to fetch some water from the side and slowly drank some.

After a while, as people entered the Shaman's house to switch teapots, they saw Shao Xuan calmly sitting there. Shao Xuan was the only person who could

calmly sit inside the Shaman's house, sipping tea. Even if the two team leaders were seated, they wouldn't be this unreserved.

After approximately half an hour, the Shaman came back as if he was a gust of wind, calling, "Come with me, we're going to find Xing!"

Shao Xuan knew who this "Xing" was, having met him a few times before. Xing was even older than the Shaman, and he had watched over countless team leaders and shamans. Inside the tribe, his words carried weight, and whenever there was a pressing matter, he would always be called upon.

Only, this old man wasn't very easy to get along with. Shao Xuan remembered that the man's gaze was sharp like a knife, seemingly being able to cut you.

The Shaman brought Shao Xuan out of the house, ascending to another part of the mountain.

As they walked, there were many people who were talking with one another, but the Shaman just kept moving. They were walking so quickly that they were unable to greet anyone.

"Is that...the Shaman?" A warrior asked.

"Seems like it."

"What happened? Why is the Shaman in such a rush?"

"Did you guys not see who was following him?"



“They seem to be heading towards Lei’s house. They must be going to see Lei’s grandfather, Xing!”

Once this was said, many people displayed an, “I understand now” expression. It seems that the Shaman wanted to help Shao Xuan fight for his spot on the quota.

Although Gui He is the team leader of a hunting group, most times he would listen to Xing’s advice. Even if the Shaman gave Shao Xuan the spot, Xing might not accept it. If the Shaman wanted to add a spot, that would be even harder. During the time at the fire pit, they had announced only 30 people would be selected, so they can’t add or subtract a member.

At this moment, Xing was sitting in his room, eyes half closed, pondering something.

Xing’s father had once advised him to “Look to the distant, and don't just focus on your surroundings.” And so, Xing thought that for his descendants to be limited to the original route was too monotonous.

If you’re going to do something, better do it big! Apart from the ancestor who had first set the paths hundreds of years ago, the exploration of the new route would be the greatest honor for the tribe!

This kind of glory should naturally be obtained by his family, as for other people, he didn’t care for them.

Thinking about what Lei had just told him, Xing snorted heavily. For the Shaman to help a kid from the mountain foot, isn’t that mistreating those above?

While thinking so, the Shaman had already brought Shao Xuan inside.

Because it was the Shaman, no one dared to block his way.

Although Xing was older, there was still a difference in their position. As the Shaman, everyone was required to give him respect.

Xing got up and greeted the Shaman. Regarding Shao Xuan, he pretended that

he didn't even exist.

"Ah Xuan, close the door." Shao Xuan did as the Shaman directed.

Xing's room wasn't the same as others with either a wooden hide or a grass curtain for a door, he actually had a wooden plank.

Shao Xuan moved the wooden plank, covering the line of sight of the people outside.

Seeing the Shaman acting like this, Xing grew angry in his heart. As he was about to say something, the Shaman carefully pulled something out and placed it on the table.

All of Xing's anger, all of his words had completely fled him upon seeing the stone. Due to his emotions being too complex and him becoming overly emotional, his facial expressions started to distort.

Shao Xuan felt the goosebumps on his arms growing even harder.

---

# Chapter 148 - Collection

Translated by TheLorax

Edited by EvilGurl, Ilesyt, Kezza

---

Shao Xuan knew that the tribe members had an unnatural curiosity for items found outside the tribe, but for Xing, who was always serious and wore a “The Shaman is first, but I’m second” attitude, to think he would also get excited was surprising.

Xing’s nose twitched, his nostrils flaring as his breath grew ragged, each breath becoming harder than the last as this old face grew red.

“This..... This is.....”

Xing carefully put the stone in his hands, meticulously examining it. At his age, whether it’s hunting or polishing stone tools, his experience outstripped the rest of the tribe’s. He could naturally see that this stone was polished not that long ago, perhaps within these few years, and at most within the last ten years.

However, since this stone wasn't a remnant of the ancestors, where did it come from?!

Thinking back to how hurriedly the Shaman rushed here, if it were only for the sake of a kid from the mountain foot, wouldn't this be excessive? And so, the

purpose for the Shaman's visit naturally must be because of this stone.

Thinking this far, Xing didn't care about some spot on the 30 name list either, what new route, what competition? Right now, the only thing he wanted to know was this stone's history!

Sitting there, the Shaman had finally managed to calm down, albeit still taking ragged breaths. Although his hands were still shaky, his expression had already reverted back to being unperturbed and profound.

"This is the reason I'm here." the Shaman stated.

Unconsciously, Xing's body leant towards the Shaman, and he pricked up his ears, ready to listen carefully. With a slightly shaky voice the Shaman started, "Ah Xuan, tell Old Xing how you obtained this stone."

Xing's eyes widened in shock as he looked at Shao Xuan. The Shaman's words had stunned him.

What? This stone was obtained by Ah Xuan?! Where did it come from?

Wait, this kid disappeared for a year!

"You, talk quickly!" Xing commanded as he turned to face Shao Xuan. Xing's harsh tone was more intense than normal due to the urgency of the matter. When people heard him talk, they would feel as if they were being interrogated, as his two eyes seemed like a pair of daggers stabbing into you.

However, Shao Xuan didn't mind his tone. Since the Shaman was here, Xing couldn't do anything to him.

"It's like this....."

Shao Xuan quickly explained the stone's origin, however due to Xing's urgency he omitted quite a bit, focusing only on how he obtained the stone.

"Hui..... It's the Hui Tribe!" Xing's eyes turned red. Looking at the Shaman he asked, "The reason for you coming here, it was to verify this, right?"

The Shaman nodded his head, "Yes, I hope that you will bring that thing out."

Taking a deep breath, Xing carefully put the stone back. He moved as if he was dealing with something fragile, every small action was extremely cautious,

putting in every effort to control his body, afraid of breaking this stone.

Usually, Xing would pass through like thunder and move like the wind, his methods were heavy and fierce. To see him acting like this, his family members would be scared to death.

Xing's house was about twenty square meters. Apart from a stone table, his house only had a few wooden chairs, and an extremely large stone jar that Xing used as storage.

Half kneeling, Xing opened the jar, extended both hands within, and pulled out a stone box. Each and every one of his movements were as cautious as when he was handling the patterned stone.

Shao Xuan noticed that Xing was looking at the box with eyes full of reverence, his emotions clearly visible. At this moment, his sharp eyes were focused on the stone box, as if nothing else in this world mattered.

Carefully placing the box on the table, Xing opened it.

Shao Xuan stretched his neck to look inside. Inside there was another box.  
[TL: Boxception O.o]

Between these two boxes were some wood shavings, evidently meant to protect the inside box.

Slowly taking out the smaller box, Xing gently wiped the wood shavings away with the utmost care, his actions vastly different to his usual behaviour.

He opened the cover.

Inside, there were more wood shavings, and in the middle of all that was an object covered with thick animal hide. After so much experience in hunting, Shao Xuan could tell how high quality this hide was.

Ordinarily, high quality animal hide was hard and stiff, but there were also softer areas, it was just harder to come by.

These materials were all top-notch. Exquisite wood shavings, and this hard to come by animal hide, all in order to protect the object inside. All this careful packaging was making Shao Xuan extremely curious, attentively watching Xing's actions.

With full concentration, Xing carefully took out the wrapped object and started unwrapping it, immediately letting Shao Xuan see.

Shao Xuan focused on this precious object that had Xing and the Shaman so worked up. He blinked a few times; then blinking again, he gave it one more look.

Shao Xuan didn't know what kind of expression he should bring out regarding this object. He felt that, in his heart, there was a flock of birds pecking at him repeatedly.

Based on what they had said, and seeing how Xing and the Shaman behaved, Shao Xuan had expected the object to be from outside the tribe, something extremely precious; a treasure that was hard to come by. For example, the pieces of ice located in Eagle Mountain, or perhaps the skin or threads from the white insect, or perhaps a type of fire crystal. Perhaps even something rougher, like a valuable part from a high level beasts.

But the thing he saw now was totally outside his expectations.

He watched as Xing carefully handled this clay jar, or more accurately, this coloured pot.

The paintings on the pot had a style similar to the paintings on the stone that Shao Xuan had brought back, with each brush stroke seeming like a swirling curve.

Seeing Shao Xuan staring dumbly at the pot, the corner of Xing's mouth couldn't help but rise.

"Haven't seen something like this before huh?!" Xing smiled proudly.

Shao Xuan was speechless.

"Struck dumb huh?!" Xing continued.

Shao Xuan was still speechless.



“This jar is something that has been passed down from my ancestors. It came from outside the tribe, and isn’t even made out of stone!” Xing explained this to the child who came from the mountain foot. With Shao Xuan’s lack of response, Xing felt that he wasn’t all that knowledgeable, and thus was incapable of understanding how precious this object truly was. Because even when they used the instructions in the ancestor’s scroll, they had yet to successfully recreate a jar.

Fast forward a few thousand years, items like this jar became the tribe’s priceless treasures, something kept hidden away to safeguard. And so, the people protecting the jar naturally formed an air of superiority.

Although this jar was extremely fragile, no one would ever hand this treasure over, even if they were faced against strong totem warriors or untamable ferocious beasts!

“Thinking about it, there is another family that also has an inherited treasure, and it’s also a clay jar. It’s only a shame that their jar doesn’t have paintings on it, making it extremely ugly. If we placed them together, ah, the difference would be like a carnivorous ferocious beast and an herbivore,” Xing continued.

In the hearts of the tribe members, the creatures that weren't strong and didn't eat meat were all useless. They were looked down upon by all, as herbivores were unable to compare with the highly looked upon bloodthirsty carnivorous beasts.

Shao Xuan once again became speechless. This old man is way too proud! Shao Xuan, seeing Xing’s smug, smiling, proud face, almost wanted to beat him up.

No wonder that when listening to the gossip, he would always hear about a dispute between Xing and someone new every time. Apart from his manner, it must also be because of his family’s clay jar, something they have that is superior to others.

Opening his mouth, Shao Xuan did not know how to respond. This was the difference between him and the native people of this world.

Observing this jar and what was on it, he noted the simple lines, some resembled clouds and some resembled wind. In addition, there was a face with such swirling brushstrokes, the face seemed oddly exaggerated. The jar was fully decorated in three colors, red, brown, and purple.

To the tribe's people, not only was this beautiful, but more importantly, this painting contained the totem image of the tribe. This image gave off a strange feeling unique to shaman drawings, and was an indication of the tribe that it came from.

Just now, Xing had said that this was a product from the Hui tribe. So, back then the ancestors had contact with this Hui tribe?

The Shaman was watching the rambling Xing, forcing a smile and nodding his head along. Whenever talk about this jar came up, Xing would always be like this, acting totally opposite to usual manner.

After talking for a while, and seeing the other two people weren't responding, Xing returned back to the stone that Shao Xuan had brought back. Excitedly, he closed his eyes as he recalled the patterns on the stone. Xing then carefully lifted the jar up, letting Shao Xuan and the Shaman look at the bottom. They found that the pictures matched.

"It should be from the Hui tribe." Xing explained. Before, he had always believed that the other tribes were millions of miles away from them, and that was why they hadn't seen anything else come from outside.

He never thought that today, something like this would actually happen. That before he died, he would see more things from the Hui tribe, and maybe, possibly meet the people?

Thinking for a while, Xing found his excitement hard to contain. Fervently looking towards the Shaman, he wanted to get a clear answer from him. At least, getting some hope was good. The Shaman was the wisest person in the tribe, and apart from him, Xing couldn't think of anyone else who could solve this problem.

"I have an idea." The Shaman told Xing about how his method involving flying on Chacha's back to get over the mountain.

Focused on listening, Xing repeatedly nodded his head. “Not bad, the forest over there does have many obstacles. If we can fly over, it would be good.”

Shao Xuan heard the discussion between Xing and the Shaman, and inserted, “Actually, we can try passing by the large river.”

The two people, thinking about how to get across, both turned towards Shao Xuan.

---

# Chapter 149 - Obsession

Translated by TheLorax

Edited by EvilGurl, Ilesyt, Kezza

---

Being stared at by both Xing and the Shaman, Shao Xuan scratched his head, "Actually, I have been observing the river since long ago."

"You want to let Chacha fly across?" The Shaman shook his head, "With the river being extremely wide, Chacha won't have any place to rest. There's also the threat of the river beasts. Even if Chacha experiences two more growth phases, he still might be unable to fly across."

Flying without eating, drinking, or resting, the success rate naturally is slim to none.

Xing too gave Shao Xuan a look of, "Sure enough, younger people have simple thoughts."

"No, not just Chacha flying, I'm thinking of making a boat, a simple canoe like thing. Since the giant trees in the forest are so abundant, this won't prove to be difficult." Shao Xuan explained.

"'Boat'? I read about boats and rafts in the animal hides the ancestors left behind. But Shao Xuan, the river has beasts that feast upon wood so it will get

torn apart.” the Shaman responded. Although he hadn’t been to the river bank that often, he had heard a lot about it. Even if they built a ship, it would disappear not long after entering the river.

“For the majority of the time it would be like that, but during the rainy season the insects that eat wood and the frightening river beasts will all leave for a period of time. They only return when the two moons eclipse.”

“What?! Is what you're saying true?!!” Not only the Shaman, but Xing, who was looking at Shao Xuan like he was too optimistic, also couldn’t help jumping up. If what Shao Xuan said was true, then they could truly attempt to traverse the river.

Shao Xuan started speaking of his discoveries over the past few years. Of course, everything was all conjecture, but Shao Xuan knew that as long as there was a spark of hope, the Shaman would be willing to try.

When Shao Xuan finished, Xing and the Shaman became quiet, each one of them thinking deeply and analyzing the feasibility of what Shao Xuan had just said.

After quite a while, Xing was the first to speak, “If this is true, we can attempt this! Ah Xuan won’t do, this old man will personally go instead!”

The Shaman raised his gaze, making eye contact with Xing, “Do you think Chacha will listen to you?”

Xing didn’t make a sound. Although he hadn’t interacted with Chacha, after hearing his grandson and other people talk about him, Xing knew of the eagle’s temperament. Indeed, Chacha would only listen to what Shao Xuan says, so it was no good.

“Even if Chacha won’t listen, I could still use the...‘boat’!” Xing said, albeit lacking confidence. He knew that the feasibility of his words were low, it was a method of surefire death.

“Then that’s settled, Shao Xuan. Wait until next year’s rainy season. Take this time to make more observations and your preparations. Since we have been waiting for so many years, what is a couple more? Only remember to not tell anyone.” the Shaman said. His later words were directed straight at Xing.

“I understand.” Said Xing, while gazing at the clay jar on the table then shifting his gaze to the stone. He added, “If there’s anything I need to do, just tell me directly.”

Although Xing still didn’t have a favorable impression about Shao Xuan, regarding this matter, he didn't equivocate, thus proving his interests were the same as the Shaman’s.

At the end of the day, the most important matter was establishing the new route, something the ancestors had wanted for many years.

Since everything had already been said, the Shaman took back the stone and left the house, bringing Shao Xuan with him. As the Shaman took the stone back, Xing’s eyes were stuck on it like glue. Shao Xuan thought that if he were the one holding it, Xing wouldn’t hesitate to steal it.

This was indeed an odd thought. Shao Xuan followed behind the Shaman, and thinking about Xing’s reaction, laughed at the idea. Perhaps for the tribe members, his own thoughts were weirder.

Waiting until the Shaman and Shao Xuan had left, Xing looked towards the colored jar, gently caressing it. Tears were streaming down the cheeks of his aged face as he was half crying while half smiling

After a good while, waiting until his mood had somewhat stabilized, he carefully put the jar back. He then opened the window and stared outside lost in thought.

Outside, he was met with a curtain of pitch black.

Winter was coming, and the darkest time of the year was about to arrive. The darkness brought with it feelings of repression, but the heart warred against this, until emotions broke through.

Inside the house, the fire was burning, the timber wood making crackling noises.

Xing sat back down on the wooden chair, gradually recalling everything Shao Xuan had said. Deciding it wasn't enough, he pulled out a sheet of animal hide, and then personally imparted everything that had happened today.

Tuk tuk tuk!

Someone knocked on Xing's wooden door.

After the Shaman and Shao Xuan left, Xing once again opened his door. His family members knew that they couldn't just enter and had to knock first and be permitted.

If one did not receive permission and entered, the consequences would be grave. And so, when Xing's family members saw the Shaman directly entering with Shao Xuan, they all flew far away, not daring to eavesdrop on their conversation. Only after the pair had left did they come back.

"Grandpa?" Standing outside the door was Lei.

"Come in." Xing responded.

Lei moved away from the door, entering the room. He wanted to speak, but after seeing that Xing's state was uncommon, Lei paused. Not daring to recklessly ask what had caused this, he repressed his curiosity.

"Grandpa, just now, was the Shaman here to let Ah Xuan enter the 30 man group?"

Xing did not respond.

Lei didn't know what had happened to his grandpa, and raising his gaze, he saw his grandpa absentmindedly staring at the fire, lost in his thoughts. This is too strange!

Did he dare to ask one more time?

Lei recalled back to the fighting to get him on the list; how Xing had pulled out a chunk of fire crystal to use for the 30 chosen men. This proves that his



grandpa would do anything to keep this honor with the family.

Summoning up his courage, he asked once again, “Grandpa, did the Shaman want you to give Shao Xuan a spot?”

This time Xing reacted.

“Allow Shao Xuan to join? This can absolutely not happen!” Xing suddenly became passionate.

“Even if we did give a spot, it should be for our own people.” Lei agreed.

Without waiting for Lei to finish talking, his grandpa had already said, “Exploring the new route is too dangerous. If he enters and somehow doesn't make it out, then what will we do? Absolutely not, he cannot be in danger, moreso, he cannot die!”

Lei was speechless. Grandpa, your own grandson, the one that you personally recommended to join is still standing here!

From start to finish, Xing had not paid any attention towards Lei's facial expressions, and even if Xing did, he couldn't be bothered to care. Rather, in his heart, he was thinking about what he should do. Ever since he had conversed with Shao Xuan and the Shaman, he was unwilling to allow Shao Xuan to leave the tribe, not to mention going to explore the new route!

Should they also not allow Shao Xuan to join the hunting group?

However, if Shao Xuan lacked enough experience, when he would leave, he would encounter even greater obstacles, and even greater challenges. At that time, if he didn't have experience, would he succeed?

But, if he got eaten by a ferocious beast before this happened.....  
Oh, how worrisome!

This was the first time Xing had experienced such a dilemma. He had no way out.

Lei watched his grandpa depressedly stroke his beard, almost pulling a few strands of hair out.

Curious once more, Lei probed out, “Then why did the Shaman bring Ah Xuan?”

Xing had already recovered from his stupor, and hearing Lei’s words, didn’t bother to explain. He simply repeated what his father had once told him, “Look to the distant, and don't just focus on your surroundings.”

Lei closed his eyes in silent disapproval. Every time you “look to the distant”, what you look at changes!

At the end, Lei couldn’t managed to squeeze an answer out, and instead, got chased out of the house.

During nighttime, night swallows could be seen flying in the air. Approaching the late hours, when everything turned calm, the temperature plummeted, and the fierce gales would meet with ice and snow, and travel across the mountain.

This was not an ordinary winter.

During this winter, the Shaman did not manage anything else and delegated the job to his assistants, even letting Gui Ze start taking on more Shaman tasks.

Everytime Shao Xuan would ascend the mountain; Xing would face the wind and snow to meet them, wanting to hear of any progress made.

At the start, there was only Xing and the Shaman, but then they included Head Chief Ao. Being the head chief, Ao, had the right to be informed of this project.

After that, the elders with a say in the tribe were informed.

And so, when Shao Xuan ascended the mountain, a few elders, along with the head chief, rushed to the Shaman’s place.

However, they weren’t willing to tell the two team leaders, because they

were responsible for opening the new route. It would not be good if they became distracted, as a result, the two leaders were extremely depressed.

Regardless of previous disputes, or whether or not they had an issue with Shao Xuan, upon knowing of the plan, everyone decided to put these things aside.

For Shao Xuan and the Shaman's plan, they would exhaust their all to help. Not! Withholding! Anything!

Their time on earth was running out, and compared to those still at the prime of their lives, the hope that this plan could succeed before their end was quite farfetched. People couldn't get too greedy. And like the ferocious beasts, there were some times that this turned victory into defeat.

However, there were some people who held onto these hopes, thinking that perhaps there would be a day where they could see the places that the ancestors had told stories about, and even see other humans!

When winter ended and the earth warmed again, the tribe resumed their active lives. Preparing for the upcoming ceremony, Shao Xuan had once again been selected to dance.

This had made many people feel dissatisfied, especially the younger warriors. Last time, when Shao Xuan had found the fire crystals and was chosen to enter, they had no complaints. But this time, while he had been missing for a year, what kind of service did he do for the tribe?

However, everyone discovered that no matter how dissatisfied they were, no matter who they complained to, the elder's response was always, "He deserves it."

This caused the two team leaders endless headaches. Recently, there would be many people asking them about the matter with Shao Xuan, but they weren't clear either. When going to the Shaman or the others to ask, all they were met with was, "Don't think about anything else, continue with the exploration."

---

# Chapter 150 - Setting Sail

Translated by TheLorax

Edited by EvilGurl, Ilesyt, Kezza

---

If people were observing the tribe, it would look as if nothing had changed. Yet, if one looked closely, it wasn't difficult to spot the many changes that had been quietly occurring. And so, when everyone had gathered together once again, they realised to their surprise that almost nothing was the same.

For example, a few elderly silhouettes were frequently seen strolling along the riverside, often including the head chief. This aroused the curiosity of those who lived at the base of the mountain. So much so, that even when it wasn't time to fish, they would run over and observe them.

Thus, before long, the tribe members had developed a habit of heading to the river when they were free. Perhaps they could encounter a prominent member of the tribe and talk about life?

Additionally, those living in the upper mountain discovered that the ill-tempered elders treated Shao Xuan quite amicably! This was something that they couldn't believe!

Even more, the gaze that the two team leaders gave Shao Xuan was

extremely strange.

However, there was still a matter that left everyone puzzled. During the rainy season, several important members of the tribe would still brave the rain every day and go to the river, something that had never happened in the past. Through each successive generation's stories, the people of the tribe had grown to fear the river. Although people's perception of the river had slightly improved in the last few years due to the fishing, it wouldn't cause the elders to run over there, right?

Doubtful people continued to doubt, while hopeful people continued to hope.

This year the focus and planning was all for the rainy season.

As Shao Xuan's sixteenth year progressed, important members of the tribe started to suffer from insomnia due to nerves and excitement. Every day, they would gather together to discuss the plan and to see if there were any necessary changes to be made.

Some members of the tribe proceeded with the tasks of searching for wood, crafting a boat, and weaving a sail. While completing them, it became increasingly difficult to keep the people in the dark.

The Shaman finally informed the whole tribe about the plan during the ceremony. This caused everyone to have heated discussions for a long time, from the start and until the end of the rainy season, Shao Xuan was frequently stopped by the tribe members and flooded with questions.

&nbsp;

Everyone in the tribe had a strong sense of anticipation. Although many people didn't understand all of the Shaman's words, it didn't stop them from being caught up in the atmosphere.

Finally, the rainy season, with its abundant and harsh rain, arrived. The hegemony of the river emerged in large groups, seeming to be endless as they swam downstream. The insects that ate wood also gradually left, and along with them, so did many other creatures that had followed the giant animals downstream. They would only return when the two rounded moons eclipsed. There were also those that had appeared for a period of time following the

frogs, then disappeared to some other place.

And this time, Shao Xuan took advantage of the time between when the rainy season ended, and before the two moons reunited to set off.

The day that the rainy season ended, every member inside the tribe went down the mountain. From the elderly to the children, from the top of the mountain to the foot, everyone dropped what they were doing and gathered at Path of Glory to watch.

“Move it out.” The Shaman said, standing at the mountain peak.

Ao and the two team leaders, along with a couple of robust warriors cautiously and solemnly moved the canoe out.

The canoe was shaped like a spindle. It was ten meters long and nearly three meters at its widest. They had made it so big to allow Chacha to be able to rest inside; if it was only Shao Xuan riding, the canoe wouldn't need to be this large.

The wood used to craft the boat had been selected by Shao Xuan after the hunting teams brought back many different types from outside. Once the wood type was selected, they then went out in search of the best, most satisfactory tree.

The canoe was then crafted by Shao Xuan, along with some of the tribe's best stone crafters, including Old Ke. They first cut down the tree and then hollowed out the center, resulting in a spacious, yet nimble ship.

This process was relatively straightforward, yet it was difficult to make sure it was entirely leak free and wouldn't capsize in the wind.

The design blueprint was also personally drawn by Shao Xuan. He had consulted with the elderly warriors while drawing; they might not understand canoes, but they were knowledgeable regarding useful techniques to cross the river. Shao Xuan had used these suggestions and altered his original plans.

With the completion of the design, the stone crafters got to work, chopping down many trees to practice their skills. Since wooden tools were not the same as stone tools, they didn't dare to carelessly start on the canoe. Only after they grasped the fundamentals and a few tricks of the trade, did they feel comfortable enough to start.

The canoe wasn't considered heavy to the tribe's totem warriors. On a regular day, they would carry stones without any problem, how could carrying wood be any harder?

Yet, to show the importance of this event to the tribe, several high level totem warriors were dispatched to carry the canoe down the mountain, giving the atmosphere of a solemn ritual.

Shao Xuan sat cross legged as the Shaman drew on his face. Just like the warriors, this was considered a blessing of sorts. The Shaman had even drawn pictures on Chacha's leg that resembled the giant eagle's found at Eagle Mountain.

After the Shaman had finish the drawings, Shao Xuan paid respects to the fire



pit, and then marched down the Path of Glory with the totem warriors, heading towards the canoe. Chacha directly shot up in the sky, and flew ahead.

The Shaman and the elders could be seen behind the canoe, their faces displaying a wide range of emotions. Some looked excited and others looked worried, some elders looked peaceful, but none could control the twitches of their facial muscles, showing their hearts did not truly feel any sort of peace at all. This was something that the ancestors had always desired, how can they be calm?

Along this route, the spectators too gathered behind the canoe, following its movement. Adults had brought their kids, and disabled people hobbled on their crutches, causing those around them to lend a hand as they closely stuck together.

Together, they sang the “Hunting Song” and the “Prayer Song”. Originally only those in the upper mountain sang, but before long, those in the lower mountain joined in. The whole tribe’s voices, tender, aged, sharp or rough belted through the air at the same rhythm, singing the same song. For them, singing represented how they felt at this moment in time.

The majority of the tribe weren’t adept at showing their emotions or thoughts, so singing allowed them a medium to do so.

Usually the Hunting Song brought out a feeling of impatient murderous air, this time, for the first time, it had carried with it a sense of fearlessness and hope.

And so, on this day, the whole tribe had collectively gathered to send Shao Xuan off.

What was on the other side of the river? They didn’t know and had never attempted to find out. In the eyes of many, Shao Xuan’s actions were admirable, but they didn’t believe he would be able to safely cross. This river was truly too dangerous! Too fierce!

After the canoe had been delivered down the mountain, Ao’s group had carefully pushed it into the river.

The boat that they had crafted could be classified as a double outrigger

canoe.

Its name came from the miniature boat like structures on either side of the canoe. Shao Xuan had designed it like that to provide extra support; he had seen it during a vacation abroad in his past life.

With this design, the canoe could overcome the risk of capsizing due to the fierce winds. Furthermore, the canoe had the advantage of being lightweight. Back in his previous world, this boat was used for long distance travel and transportation.

The sail was also an important part of the boat, helping the boat navigate through the waters. This sail was woven from a combination of tree leaves and vines. These flexible yet sturdy vines were discovered in the hunting grounds and sent to the finest weavers to create a triangular sail.

In the eyes of the Shaman, these kinds of materials with unpredictable uses should be collected, the more the better. However, those vines were truly difficult to find, and in the end, they could only find two chunks. One of those chunks had been used to weave the sail, while the other one was set as a reserve. With only one in reserve, they didn't know if it would be enough.

In his past life, Shao Xuan had learnt that this kind of boat could sail for more than 200 kilometers a day. However, in this world, he wasn't too sure how far he could go with the different conditions.

Shao Xuan continued to attach the side supports to the main canoe, examining every nook and cranny and checking if he brought everything he needed. When he was finished, he looked back towards the shore.

Caesar was carrying Old Ke as he stood on the shore, observing Shao Xuan and the descending Chacha. Caesar was whimpering as he too wanted to follow after the pair, but Shao Xuan simply couldn't bring him along. If they encounter any dangers in the river, Shao Xuan could escape along with Chacha, but Caesar couldn't.

Had Chacha been the same size as the giant eagles at Eagle Mountain, he could've brought a couple of people along. Unfortunately, he was still too small.

"Goodbye. I'm leaving." Shao Xuan said to the shore as he cupped his hands in farewell.

Under the direction of the Shaman, everyone followed in his manner as they

too mimicked Shao Xuan's actions. This was, in the past million years, something never seen before.

For the members of the tribe, Shao Xuan was their sole hope. If he did not succeed, then how much longer would they have to wait until they could try again? No one knew, perhaps even after a thousand years, nothing would change.

With a pull of the sail, the wind filled it and the canoe launched out.

The sail was incredibly big. If it wasn't for the totem's power, Shao Xuan might not be able to operate it.

Chacha, this rascal! Standing inside the canoe, he curiously looked around both sides. For him, this was an extremely novel experience. To think that he could be able to stand on water!

However, despite being such a big ship, compared to Chacha, it was still considered small. He couldn't move around, at best he could only stand stationary for a while before flying back up again towards the direction Shao Xuan told him. The sky truly had more freedom, and when he tired of flying, he could return back to the canoe to rest.

On the shore, the tribe continued to sing the prayer song together.

Shao Xuan turned his head, looking back as the people on the shore grew smaller and smaller. The houses situated on the mountain grew hazier and hazier, and the mountain where he had spent eight years of his life grew fainter and fainter as the water finally touched the sky.

Other than the howling of the wind, all else was quiet.

Looking towards the direction of the sun, feeling the changes in the wind, Shao Xuan adjusted his sails, heading towards the unknown.

---

**Publisher:**

---

# Support On Bitcoin :

1EQWkgnjcxRm4jDTLyZ3y4wobUJaZHXVBF

From TooLate

---

From **Doswap**